



HISTORY OF GREAT BRITAIN
SECOND EDITION. VOLUME IV. AND V.

1/4.

BULENT
OARL

HISTORY OF GREAT BRITAIN

FROM THE UNION OF THE CROWNS TO THE
DEATH OF GEORGE III.



ARMS OF JAMES I.

ADAPTED TO THE SCOTTISH CODE.

London:
T. NELSON AND SONS, PATERNOSTER ROW.
EDINBURGH; AND NEW YORK.

1886.

THIS Text-book of British History meets the requirements of Standards IV. and V. of the "Scotch Code."

The book serves the purposes at once of a Reading-book and of a Text-book of History. Its plan is to give at the beginning of each reign a full chronological Summary of the leading events, and then to treat of several of the most important features in special reading lessons, written in a bright and picturesque style. Prominence is given to events connected specially with Scotland.

The text is illustrated with Portraits of Historical Personages; and the book is furnished with Maps, Notes, Questions, and complete Lists of Words, including an Accented List of Proper Names.

CONTENTS.

*** The Italics indicate Poetical Pieces.*

INTRODUCTION, vii

THE HOUSE OF STEWART.

James I.: 1603-1625, ..	13
1. Church Troubles, ..	14
2. A Rebellion in Orkney, ..	18
3. The Founders of New England, ..	20
4. <i>The Sailing of the "Mayflower" for England</i> (Longfellow), ..	22
5. The King and the Parliament, ..	24
Charles I.: 1625-1649, ..	24
6. The Struggle Renewed, ..	26
7. Strafford and Laud, ..	29
8. <i>The Emigrants in the Bermudas</i> (Marvell), ..	32
9. Scotland under Charles, ..	35
10. The Five Members, ..	36
11. The Civil War, ..	40
12. Triumph of the Parliament, ..	44
13. <i>The Battle of Philiphaugh</i> (Ballad), ..	48
14. Death of the King, ..	51
The Commonwealth: 1649-1660, ..	54
15. Cromwell's Troubles, ..	56
16. <i>The Execution of Montrose</i> (Aytoun), ..	59
17. Dunbar Drove, ..	63
18. Scotland under Cromwell, ..	65
19. The Protectorate, ..	68
20. <i>In Praise of Oliver Cromwell</i> (Dryden), ..	72
21. End of the Protectorate, ..	73
Charles II.: 1660-1685, ..	75
22. The Restoration, ..	76
23. <i>The Rebuilding of London</i> (Dryden), ..	80
24. The Restoration in Scotland, ..	81
25. Times of the Cabal, ..	85
26. Civil War in Scotland, ..	87
27. Absolute Monarchy again, ..	90

CONTENTS.

James II: 1685-1688,	93
28. The Invasions of Argyle and Monmouth,	93
29. The Declarations of Indulgence,	96
30. The Revolution,	99
William III and Mary II: 1688-1694-1702,	102
31. Settlement of England and Ireland,	102
32. The Revolution in Scotland,	106
33. The Battle of Killiecrankie (Aytoun),	108
34. The Massacre of Glencoe,	111
35. Glencoe (Scott),	114
36. Foreign Policy,	115
37. The Darien Scheme,	117
38. The Spanish Crown,	120
Anne: 1702-1714,	123
39. Marlborough's Wars,	123
40. The Battle of Blenheim (Southey),	126
41. The Union of the Parliaments,	129
42. Ascendency of the Commons,	132

THE HOUSE OF HANOVER.

George I: 1714-1727,	135
43. The 'Fifteen,	136
44. The South Sea Scheme,	138
George II: 1727-1760,	141
45. Walpole's Ministry,	142
46. The 'Forty-five,	145
47. Dark Culloden,	147
48. Pitt's Foreign Policy,	150
49. The Conquest of Canada,	153
George III: 1760-1820,	157
50. American Independence,	159
51. The Indian Empire,	163
52. The French Revolution,	167
53. Copenhagen and Trafalgar,	171
54. The Battle of the Baltic (Campbell),	175
55. The Struggle with Napoleon,	178
56. The Peninsular War,	180
57. Adjuncts of the War,	184
58. Quatre Bras and Ligny,	187
59. Waterloo,	191
60. The Field of Waterloo (Byron),	194
61. After the War,	198
62. The British Constitution,	201
63. A Highland Marching Song (Nicolson),	204

Summary of Events since the Death of George III.,	210
Words Contained in this Book,	213

SUMMARY OF ENGLISH HISTORY BEFORE THE UNION OF THE CROWNS.

1. CELTIC PERIOD.—The earliest inhabitant of Britain of whom anything is certainly known were Celts,—people of the same race as the natives of Gaul. The Welsh-speaking people of Wales, and the Gaelic-speaking people of Scotland and of Ireland, are their descendants.

2. ROMAN PERIOD (55 B.C.-410 A.D.)—The little we know of the Celtic Britons we have learned from the Romans, who first visited the island in 55 B.C. Not, however, till the reign of the Emperor Claudius (41-54 A.D.) did the Romans make any permanent settlement in Britain. From 43 till 410—a period of 367 years—Britain was a Roman province, ruled by Roman governors, and often visited by the Roman Emperors.

During the greater part of that time, the Roman province of Britain extended as far north only as to the Tyne and the Solway Firth: between which a wall or rampart was built, to keep off the Picts, and the Scots—natives of the northern part of the island, and of Ireland.

There was another Roman wall, between the Firth of Forth and Clyde. But the Romans were never able to make that their permanent boundary. The district between the two walls was only partially subdued, and that for short periods. The country north of the Forth and Clyde was several times traversed by Roman armies, but it was never conquered or governed by the Romans.

At length Rome herself became so weak that she was forced to withdraw her troops from Britain, in order to defend her own wall. The Britons were then left in a sad plight. They were exposed to constant attacks from their northern foes the Picts and the Scots, and they had no native army to oppose them.

It is said that the Britons, in their distress, asked the help of certain pirates, who used to plunder their coasts; and that these pirates, having aided the Britons, wrested from them land on which they and their families might settle.

3. OLD ENGLISH PERIOD (449-1066).—However this may be, it is certain that about the middle of the fifth century, Teutonic tribes, from the southern coasts of the North Sea, began to settle on the

eastern and southern shores of Britain. These settlers, who spoke different dialects of the Low-German tongue, belonged chiefly to three tribes,—the Angles, the Saxons, and the Jutes.

By-and-by, the Angles came to have most power; and after them the land was called ENGLAND; and the speech of the whole people, like the people themselves, ENGLISH.

When the Teutons came to Britain, they were heathens in religion, and little better than savages in life and manners. But Augustine began to preach Christianity in Kent in 597, and it rapidly spread to the other states.

These Teutonic states were frequently at war with one another; and thus the weaker became gradually absorbed in the stronger ones. In this way the whole land came, by-and-by, to be in the hands of three states,—Wessex, Mercia, and Northumbria. Then these three contended, and in the end the King of Wessex became in reality, though not at once in name, King of all England (827).

For two hundred years after that, the English were engaged in constant wars with the Norsemen or Danes. The Kings who were most successful in resisting them were Alfred the Great and Æthelstan. But at last (1017) the Danes wrested the crown from the English, and three Danish Kings in succession filled the English throne.

The English line was then restored, in the person of Edward the Confessor,—an Englishman by birth, but a Norman by education. He filled his court with Frenchmen, where he also introduced French customs and the French tongue.

When he died, Harold, Earl of Kent, was chosen King, the nearest heir being a mere boy. But William, Duke of Normandy, claimed the crown, alleging that Edward, who was his second cousin, had bequeathed it to him. He therefore sailed for England with a powerful army, and defeated Harold (who was killed on the field) at Senlac Hill, near Hastings (1066). This event is known as the Norman Conquest.

4. HOUSE OF NORMANDY (1066–1154).—During the earlier years of the Conqueror's reign the English frequently rebelled, and made various attempts to throw off the Norman yoke. William resorted to extremely cruel measures in order to establish his authority. He carried fire and sword through the country, and laid waste the northern counties. All Englishmen were removed from places of power and dignity. Nearly all the land was taken from its English owners and given to William's Norman followers.

But these Norman lords did not call the land their own. It belonged to the King, and they held it from him by Feudal tenure; that is to say, they paid rent for it, not in money, but in service in time of war. Each lord divided his estates among the gentry, and these subdivided theirs among their vassals. In every case the higher required from the lower the tribute of service; and by this means, when war

was proclaimed, a large army was soon gathered around the royal standard. Thus was established in England the Feudal System, which held sway there for four hundred years after the Norman Conquest.

One great evil of the system became apparent in the reign of Stephen. He succeeded to the throne in preference to his cousin Maud, daughter and heiress of Henry I., only because the feudal lords thought it a disgrace to submit to a woman's rule. In return for their support, Stephen allowed the barons to build castles on their own estates, and to garrison them with their own vassals. They thus became very powerful, often waging war on one another, and sometimes even defying the King himself.

When Maud's son grew to manhood, he invaded England to claim the crown, which was his by right. After the death of Stephen's only son, war was averted by a compromise. Stephen was allowed to reign till his death, and young Henry was acknowledged as his heir.

5. HOUSE OF ANJOU (1154–1399).—In less than a year after this agreement was made, Stephen died. The direct Norman line then came to an end, and the House of Anjou began.

Henry's descendants are sometimes called Plantagenets, from the device—a sprig of broom, or *plante de genêt*—worn by one of the early Counts of Anjou. The name *Plantagenet* is generally applied to the whole dynasty of fourteen Kings, from Henry II. to Richard III. (1154 to 1485), and includes the three Houses of Anjou, Lancaster, and York.

The French possessions of Henry II. were more extensive than those of any of his predecessors. Indeed, he owned and ruled the whole of the west of France, from the Somme to the Garonne, or more than one-third of French soil.

The French Kings could not be expected tamely to submit to this aggression by a foreigner. Henry II. contrived to retain all his possessions in his firm grasp till his death, even though his own son made common cause with the French King against him. But Richard I. lost his life in defending them; and his brother John, ere he had been many years on the throne, lost every shred of French land that his father had held (1204).

A quarrel between the Crown and the Church arose in the reign of Henry II. Archbishop Becket was the champion of the Church. At first Henry was successful against Becket; but at the tomb of that prelate he recanted his errors and did penance for the crime of Becket's murder. The struggle was renewed by John; but he was forced to make a more humbling submission. He became the Pope's vassal, and paid him a yearly rent for his dominions.

This degradation of his crown disgusted John's barons. They had other grounds of complaint against him. He had filled his court with foreigners,—refugees from Anjou and Poitou. He loaded these

strangers with honour and with riches, at the cost of the native Norman nobility. The native English citizens, insulted and oppressed by the new-comers, sympathized with the nobles. Thus it came to pass that Norman and Englishman no longer looked on each other as enemies, and a new national spirit arose in the land. At last the barons took arms against the King, and forced him to sign Magna Carta (the Great Charter), in which the foundations of English freedom were laid (1215).

In the reign of Henry III. another and greater barons' war began, also provoked by the King's fondness for foreign favourites. During that war representatives of cities and boroughs were for the first time summoned to Parliament. From this we date the rise of the House of Commons and the decay of Feudalism.

During the four remaining reigns of the Angevin period, the throne was filled by a powerful and by a weak sovereign alternately. Edward I. conquered Wales, and held Scotland in subjection. Edward II. lost Scotland, and was himself dethroned and murdered. Edward III. kept Scotland in check, and gained renown for his name and that of his son, the Black Prince, by the victories of Crecy (1346) and Poitiers (1356). Richard II., impatient of the restraint of his uncles, grasped at absolute power, was dethroned in favour of his cousin, and came to an untimely end. With him ended the House of Anjou.

Towards the end of the Angevin period, the English language emerged from the obscurity into which the Norman Conquest had cast it, and English literature began with the works of Chaucer and of Wyclif.

6. HOUSE OF LANCASTER (1399-1461).—During the Lancastrian period, which lasted sixty-two years, the power of the House of Commons steadily increased; but the main interest of the period centres in the French wars of Henry V. and Henry VI. The former, by the great victory of Agincourt (1415), opened a road to the French throne. He married the French King's daughter, and was made regent and heir to the crown. The history of the earlier part of the reign of Henry VI. is an account of the gradual decline of English influence in France, until, in 1451, Calais alone remained of all that his father had held.

Domestic troubles occupied the remainder of the reign. Henry was descended from the fourth son of Edward III.; but the Duke of York was descended from the third son of that monarch by his mother, and from the fifth son by his father. The Duke of York, therefore, claimed the throne, and the War of the Roses began. That war almost destroyed the old nobility of England. It also shattered feudalism, and thereby increased popular freedom. Henry VI. was dethroned, and the House of Lancaster was extinguished, in 1461. At the same time the great Plantagenet dynasty came to an end.

7. HOUSE OF YORK (1461-1485).—Not till ten years after his accession was Edward IV. securely seated on the throne. The rest of his reign was weak and inglorious. When he died he left two sons, the elder of whom nominally succeeded, but he was too young to reign. Richard, Duke of Gloucester, brother of the late King, was made Protector. In less than three months he seized the crown for himself, and shortly thereafter his two nephews were believed to have been murdered in the Tower.

Richard's tyranny soon made for him many enemies within his own faction. The Lancastrians were still a powerful party. A proposal was therefore made for the union of the Houses of Lancaster and York by the marriage of Henry Tudor, Earl of Richmond (who was descended from John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster), with Elizabeth of York, daughter of Edward IV.

Richmond invaded England in 1485. Friends flocked to his standard in thousands. Richard's friends deserted him. He was defeated and slain on Bosworth field. With him ended not only the House of York, but the whole dynasty of Plantagenet.

8. HOUSE OF TUDOR (1485-1603).—The two main features of the Tudor period are the rise of Protestantism and the revival of literature. The former movement was begun by Henry VIII., whose personal quarrel with the Pope led him to declare himself Head of the Church of England. But Henry had no liking for Protestantism, or for liberty of conscience, and during his later years he persecuted Protestants and Roman Catholics with equal severity.

In the reign of Edward VI. the Reformation in England was completed, by the efforts of the Protector Somerset and Archbishop Cranmer. Then the Protestant Church of England was established, and the Bible began to be freely circulated throughout the country.

Mary attempted, by a violent persecution, to force England back to the old faith; but she signally failed, and she died broken-hearted in the midst of her multiplied disasters.

In Elizabeth's reign Protestantism again emerged, strengthened by the fiery ordeal through which it had passed. In her reign, also, men were free to devote themselves to learning. The Elizabethan literature is the richest and the most solid in the annals of the country. It is adorned by the great names of Spenser and Shakespeare, and of Hooker and Bacon.

Elizabeth was the last of the descendants of Henry VIII. In 1603, therefore, the crown passed to the House of Stewart, represented by James VI. of Scotland, a descendant of Henry VII.



HISTORY OF GREAT BRITAIN.

HOUSE OF STEWART.

1603-1714 A.D.

JAMES I.

Born 1566 A.D.—Son of Mary Queen of Scots, and great-great-grandson of Henry VII.—Married Anne of Denmark—Reigned 1603-1625 A.D.

SUMMARY OF THE REIGN.

1603. James VI. of Scotland succeeds to the throne—Triumphal progress to London—The Main Plot (to place Arabella Stewart on the throne) and the Bye Plot (to secure toleration) are discovered: three conspirators are executed; Raleigh is sent to the Tower.
1604. The Hampton Court Conference—the Authorized English Bible begun—James's first Parliament called (dissolved in 1611)—A Joint-Commission of the English and Scottish Parliaments agrees to abolish all conflicting laws in the two kingdoms.
1605. Discovery of the Gunpowder Plot: Catesby and others shot; Digby, Fawkes, and seven others executed.
1606. Severe penal laws against Roman Catholics—James tries to establish Episcopacy in Scotland.
1611. Plantation of Ulster—Institution of the Order of Baronets.
1612. Death of Henry, Prince of Wales—Death of Cecil, Earl of Salisbury—Robert Carr, Viscount Rochester, afterwards Earl of Somerset, succeeds him as the King's adviser.
1614. James's second Parliament ("the Addled") meets—The Commons demand the abandonment of the right to impose customs—Parliament is dissolved, and four members are imprisoned—Execution of Robert Stewart, son of the Earl of Orkney, at Edinburgh for treason—His father Patrick is also executed.
1616. Villiers, Duke of Buckingham, becomes the King's adviser—Raleigh is released, and goes to South America—An Act of the Scottish Privy Council orders the founding of a Grammar School in every Parish (confirmed by Act of Parliament in 1633).

1617. James revisits Scotland, and attempts to restore Episcopacy.
 1618. Raleigh returns, and is beheaded on a former charge of conspiracy—The General Assembly passes the Five Articles of Perth, adopting Episcopal ceremonies.
 1620. The Pilgrim Fathers found New England.
 1621. James's third Parliament meets (January 30)—The Commons attack monopolies—Lord Bacon is impeached, degraded, and fined (dies 1626)—The Spanish marriage is opposed in Parliament—The King threatens to imprison the leaders—The Commons vindicate their liberties in their Journals—The King tears out the leaf, and adjourns Parliament—Sir William Alexander obtains a grant of land in North America, and founds Nova Scotia.
 1622. Parliament is dissolved (February 8)—Pym and Coke imprisoned.
 1623. The Spanish match is broken off.
 1624. Prince Charles is contracted to Henrietta-Maria of France—James calls his fourth Parliament—War is declared against Spain—Supplies are eagerly voted—Monopolies declared illegal—James allows troops to be raised for the Elector Frederick; the expedition fails—Death of George Heriot (Jeweller to the King), founder of Heriot's Hospital, Edinburgh.
 1625. Death of James.

1. CHURCH TROUBLES.

1. **Three great Parties.**—James the Sixth of Scotland ascended the English throne as the descendant of Margaret, eldest daughter of Henry the Seventh. When he arrived in England, he found the nation divided into three great parties, the Episcopalians, the Roman Catholics, and the Puritans. All three were nursing the hope of special favour from James. The Episcopalians trusted to his fondness for their form of church-government. The Roman Catholics thought that the son of Mary Stewart could not but cherish the creed of his mother. The Puritans clung to the hope that a King educated among Presbyterians would not dislike Puritanism. It soon appeared, however, that James was resolved to establish Episcopacy both in England and in Scotland.

2. **The Main Plot and the Bye.**—The Roman Catholics and the Puritans had one feeling in common. Both had suffered severely from the Acts of Supremacy and Uniformity in the late reign, and both dreaded their continuance under James.

The leaders of the two parties resolved on a united effort to protect themselves, and formed a double plot.

The one part, called the Main, aimed at placing Arabella Stewart, the King's cousin, on the throne, with the help of Spain.

The other part, called the Bye, had in view to remodel the Government and to secure toleration. The plot was discovered, and three of the conspirators were executed. Sir Walter Raleigh, charged with being a leader of the Main plot, was thrown into the Tower, and remained there for thirteen years.



JAMES I.

3. The Hampton Court Conference. — An

attempt was made in the following year to settle the differences between the Episcopalians and the Puritans, by a conference of the leading men of both parties, held at 1604 Hampton Court. It only served to bring out more strongly the King's liking for the Episcopal form of worship and government. James, vain of his theological learning, joined in the debates, and met all the pleas of the Puritan ministers with his favourite saying—*No bishop, no king.*

4. **Translation of the Bible.**—The new translation of the English Bible was almost the only fruit of this conference. Forty-seven ministers were engaged in the work for three years, and it was published in 1611. It was printed in the Roman character, nearly all the previously printed versions having been in the type which is called Old English.

5. **The Gunpowder Plot.**—The discontent of some of the Roman Catholics, when they found that James had no intention of overthrowing the Protestant religion in England, took

a terrible shape. Certain fanatics among them formed the Gunpowder Plot—a plot to blow up the King, Lords, and Commons, when assembled in Parliament. Robert Catesby and Sir Everard Digby were the chief conspirators. For eighteen months the preparations went on; and, although several persons were in the secret, no breath of it seems to have got abroad. A cellar beneath the House of Lords was hired; thirty-six barrels of gunpowder were placed there; coals and sticks were strewed over these; and the doors were then boldly thrown open. Still there was no discovery.

6. Only a few days before the appointed time, Lord Mount-eagle received an anonymous letter warning him not to attend the opening of Parliament. The mysterious words were:—"The Parliament shall receive a terrible blow, and shall not see who hurts them." The letter was laid before the Council, and the King was the first to guess that gunpowder was meant. On the vaults being searched the following morning, a Spanish officer, Guido or Guy Fawkes, was found preparing the matches. The rest of the conspirators fled into the country, where most of them, including Catesby, were cut down while fighting desperately. Digby, Fawkes, and seven others, were tried and executed. The 5th of November was the day that had been fixed for the deed.

7. Penal laws of the severest kind were the result of this plot. No Roman Catholic was permitted to live in London; none could be a lawyer or a doctor. All who adhered to that faith were outlawed: at any time their houses might with impunity be broken into and their furniture destroyed.

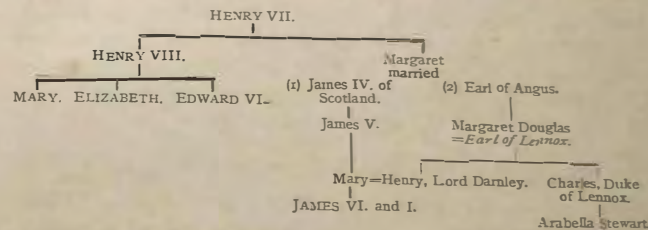
8. **Episcopacy in Scotland.**—James set his heart on introducing Episcopacy into Scotland also. In 1605 he thrice prorogued the General Assembly. The leaders having met at Aberdeen and defied his authority, six of them were arrested, and banished for life. Andrew Melville, Scotland's greatest educational reformer, was invited to London to settle the differences. He was thrown into the Tower, and was kept there for four years. Bishops and archbishops were appointed in the Church, and courts of High Commission were set up at Glasgow and St. Andrews to punish all who resisted the new order of things.

New Words in this Lesson.

ad-hered'	dif-fer-enc-es	pe-nal	The-o-log-i-cal
a-non'y-mous	dis-con-tent'	per-mit-ted	tol-er-a-tion
Con-fer-ence	fa-nat'ics	pro-rogued'	trans-la-tion
con-tin'u-ance	im-pu-ni-ty	pub-lished	U-ni-form-i-ty
des-per-ate-ly	mys-te'ri-ous	Su-prem'a-cy	ver-sions

Notes and Meanings.

1 Descendant of Margaret.—The descent of James from Henry VII. is shown in the following table:—



Puritans, so called because they strove after purity in doctrine, worship, and life.

Episcopacy, Church ruled by bishops.

2 Acts of Supremacy and Uniformity.

Passed in 1559. The former declared the King to be the head of the Church; the latter required all subjects to conform to the Church established by law.

The King's cousin. See the above table.

Toleration, recognition by the majority of the civil and religious liberty of the minority.

3 Hampton Court, a palace on the Thames, 15 miles above London. It was built by Wolsey and presented by him to Henry VIII. in 1525.

Theological, relating to theology; the science that treats of God and divine things.

5 Fanatics, wild or passionate persons; madmen.

Several persons, eight at first; afterwards sixteen, including three priests.

6 Lord Mounteagle. His brother,

Francis Tresham, was one of the conspirators, and he is supposed to have written the letter.

Anonymous, without a name; unsigned.

Guy Fawkes. He is generally supposed to have been a Spaniard; but in point of fact he was a Yorkshireman. He had joined the Spanish army in the Netherlands.

Were tried. A special Commission was appointed for the trial, at the head of which was the Earl of Nottingham, who as Lord Howard of Effingham had dispersed the Spanish Armada in 1588. He was one of the leading Roman Catholics in England. The trial began on January 27, 1606. Four of the prisoners were executed on January 30, and four on January 31. The ninth was executed in March following.

7 Penal, involving punishment. With impunity, without risk of punishment.

8 Prorogued, put off the meetings to a later time.

Questions:—1. Name the three great parties in the nation. Which did James favour? 2. What were the objects of the Main Plot and the Bye? Why was Raleigh imprisoned? 3. Why was the Hampton Court Conference held? 4. When was the new translation of the Bible published? 5. What was the object of the Gunpowder Plot? 6. How was it discovered? 7. By what laws was it followed? 8. How was Episcopacy established in Scotland?

2. A REBELLION IN ORKNEY.

1. Lawlessness in Scotland.—In many parts of Scotland the law was defied in a shameful way after James's removal to London. The freebooters renewed their raids on the Border, and engaged in feuds with one another. Clan fights still occurred in the Highlands. In 1604, the Macgregors fell on the Colquhouns in Glenfruin, and slaughtered and robbed them without mercy. In Orkney the authority of the King was openly defied.

2. "Black Pate" of Orkney.—Patrick Stewart, Earl of Orkney—still remembered in Orkney tradition as "Black Pate"—was a cousin of the King, and was himself a man of kingly ideas. Orkney is far from Holyrood, and farther from London, and the Earl did his own pleasure in his domain, without having the fear of the distant King before his eyes.

3. The system of tyranny and extortion which he carried on was extraordinary. He accused the land-owners of the islands of high treason, and tried them in his own court. But it was not his object to punish these gentlemen as traitors against the King. In that case their forfeited estates would have gone to the King, without profit to the Earl. The frightened "Udallers" were glad enough to compound with the formidable Earl by making over to him a portion of their lands, in order to save the remainder and their own lives.

4. The Orkney potentate was very ingenious in devising means of extorting money. He imposed taxes and duties. He created ferries, and levied heavy tolls on them. He compelled the people to work for him in many ways. He forced them to row his boats and man his ships, to toil in his quarries, to convey stones and lime for the building of his palace and the walls of his park, and to perform whatever other kinds of slave labour he chose to demand, "without either meat, drink, or hire."

5. After a time, the doings of this tyrant of the isles attracted the attention of the Government. He was seized and put in ward in Dumbarton Castle. What schemes were in his proud head, it would be difficult to guess; but it is a fact that, under his instructions, his son Robert occupied the Castle of Kirkwall with armed men, fortified the Cathedral, and stood ready to hold his own.

6. Siege of Kirkwall Castle.—As soon as it became known in Edinburgh that Orkney was in rebellion, the King's Secret Council sent off the Earl of Caithness to bring it under. Two great cannons were wheeled down from Edinburgh Castle and shipped at Leith, along with a strong military force. The expedition landed safely within a mile and a half of Kirkwall. The great cannons were pointed against the castle. They shot, and got their answer in shot. The siege continued about a month, when the rebels gave in.

7. Caithness returned to Edinburgh with Robert Stewart and other prisoners; and the two great cannons passed up the High Street, with the keys of Kirkwall Castle hanging at their muzzles! Robert Stewart was condemned to death, Feb. 6, and hanged at the Market Cross, along with five of his accomplices. He was a youth of only twenty-two, "of 1614 a tall stature and comely countenance." The people pitied him greatly, for it was his father's scheming that had led him to destruction. His father's execution soon followed, and then there was peace in the isles of the North.

New Words in this Lesson.

ac-com'pli-es	de-vis'ing	for'mi-da-ble	po'ten-tate
ac-cused'	do-main'	im-posed'	quar-ries
at-tract'ed	ex-tort'ing	in-ge'ni-ous	re-main'der
com-pound'	ex-tor'tion	in-struc'tions	stat-ure
coun-te-nance	ex-traor'di-nar-y	muz-zles	tra-di'tion

Notes and Meanings.

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1 Freebooters, roving plunderers. | U'dallers, persons holding land without feudal service; freeholders. |
| Glenfruin, in Dumbartonshire, between Loch Lomond and the Gare Loch. | 4 Potentate, powerful person; lord. |
| 2 Tradition, unwritten history. [burgh. | Imposed, laid on. |
| Holyrood, a royal palace at Edinburgh. | 5 Kirkwall, the chief town in Orkney; on Mainland. |
| 3 Extortion, illegal exacting of money. | 7 Accomplices, fellows in crime. |

Questions:—1. Mention instances of lawlessness in Scotland. 2. Who was "Black Pate" of Orkney? 3. How did he treat the people? 4. How did he extort money from them? 5. What was done to him? What did his son do? 6. How did the siege end? 7. How were the Stewarts punished?

3 THE FOUNDERS OF NEW ENGLAND.

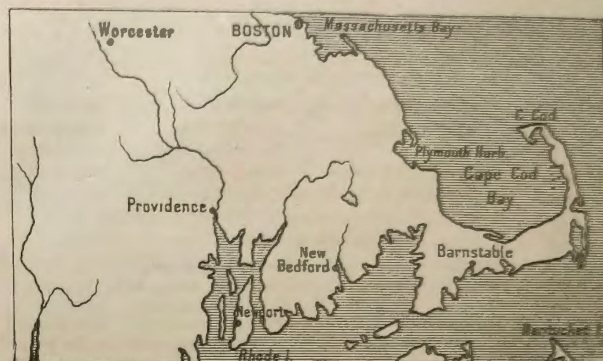
1. **Religious Oppression.**—James was as zealous as Elizabeth had been for supremacy and uniformity. He claimed the same absolute power in Church matters as he assumed in civil affairs. Many of the Puritans, despairing of freedom of religion in England, went abroad. Among these was a company of refugees from Nottinghamshire, who went to Holland. After spending eleven years there, they became afraid that their children would soon lose their nationality by intermarriage with the Dutch. They therefore resolved to emigrate to America.

2. **Sailing of the "Mayflower."**—In September 1620, the good ship *Mayflower* sailed from Plymouth, where it had called to take farewell of friends. It had one hundred persons on board—grave men, mothers, children, and even babies. For sixty-three days it tossed on the waves of the Atlantic, until the crew found themselves in November under the shelter of Cape Cod. One of their number died during the voyage.

3. In the cabin of their weather-beaten ship forty-one men signed a paper, binding themselves to obey all laws framed for the benefit of the colony. And then they began to think of landing. It was winter, and some of them had to wade ashore through the freezing shallows. Their first exploring trip was very miserable. The men, plodding over snowy hills and wading through icy rivers, were tired almost to death; and, except a little maize, they found nothing to give them hope.

4. **Plymouth Bay.**—One morning, just after prayers, when they had renewed their search for a good harbour, a wild war-whoop was heard, and a shower of Indian arrows fell whizzing among them. Then they took to their boat again, and were almost wrecked. But, just as they were beginning to despair, the tide drove the boat through the surf, and they found themselves in a safe harbour. On the 23rd December the Pilgrims

landed—stepping ashore on a huge rock, which is still carefully guarded by their descendants as "the Pilgrim Stone." Here they resolved to found their settlement, which they agreed to



call Plymouth, probably in remembrance of the kindness shown to them in the last English sea-port at which they had called.

5. The toil of building wooden houses threw many of the men into bad health: disease of the lungs struck several of them down. At last the warm winds of spring began to blow, and the birds to sing, which revived hope in their hearts; but even the sweet summer—and it is a fair season there—was saddened with graves. Food was always scarce. At one time they had only one pint of Indian corn, being an allowance of just three kernels a-piece! They did not taste beef for four years after their landing.

6. **Peace with the Indians.**—For a long time after the shower of arrows already mentioned, they saw nothing of the Indians, except the smoke from some distant wigwams, and perhaps a few dark figures moving on the skirts of the wood. One day a red man, with a cap of coloured feathers and a dress of deerskin, came into the camp and said, "Welcome, Englishmen!" He gave them to understand that they were quite free to keep the land they had settled on, because the Indian tribe which had formerly owned it had been swept away by a pestilence.

7. Then a treaty was made with the Indians, and a trade in furs began. In spite of all that foes, famine, and fever could do, the colony lived and prospered, though at first somewhat slowly; and by-and-by the little colony formed by the Pilgrims of the *Mayflower* grew into a great nation—The United States of America.

New Words in this Lesson.

ab-so-lute	em-i-grate	maize	re-vived'
al-low-ance	ex-plor-ing	men-tioned	war'-whoop
as-sumed'	har-bour	nā-tion-al'i-ty	whiz'-zing
ben'e-fit	in-ter-mar'-riage	pest-i-lence	wig'-wams
coloured	ker-nels	re-mem-brance	zeal-ous

Notes and Meanings.

- 1 Zealous, eager.
Absolute power, power without check or limit.
Nationality, English character.
2 Plymouth, on south-west coast of Devonshire.
Cape Cod, on coast of Massachusetts.

- 3 Maize, Indian corn.
6 Wigwams, Indian huts.
Pestilence, plague.
7 Pilgrims, wanderers. The Puritan emigrants are called by the people of the United States "the Pilgrim Fathers."

Questions:—1. Where did the Nottingham refugees in Holland resolve to go? Why? 2. How many sailed in the *Mayflower*? 3. What hardships did they meet with at first? 4. Where did they find a safe harbour? What did they call the settlement? 5. From what did they suffer after landing? 6. How did the Indians make peace with them? 7. Into what did the colony grow?

4. THE SAILING OF THE "MAYFLOWER" FOR ENGLAND.

[The following verses, from "Miles Standish," describe the departure of the *Mayflower* from the American shore, on its homeward voyage.]

1. Just in the gray of the dawn, as the mists uprose from the meadows,
There was a stir and a sound in the slumbering village of Plymouth.....
Sweet was the air and soft; and slowly the smoke from the chimneys
Rose over roofs of thatch, and pointed steadily eastward.
Men came forth from the doors, and paused, and talked of the weather;
Said that the wind had changed, and was blowing fair for the *Mayflower*.....

THE SAILING OF THE "MAYFLOWER" FOR ENGLAND. 23

2. Merrily sang the birds, and the tender voices of women
Consecrated with hymns the common cares of the household.
Out of the sea rose the sun, and the billows rejoiced at his coming:
Beautiful were his feet on the purple tops of the mountains;
Beautiful on the sails of the *Mayflower* riding at anchor,
Battered and blackened and worn by all the storms of the winter.
Loosely against her mast was hanging and flapping her canvas,
Rent by so many gales, and patched by the hands of the sailors.
Suddenly from her side, as the sun rose over the ocean,
Darted a puff of smoke, and floated seaward; anon rang
Loud over field and forest the cannon's roar, and the echoes
Heard and repeated the sound—the signal-gun of departure!

3. Ah! but with louder echoes replied the hearts of the people!
Meekly, in voices subdued, the chapter was read from the Bible;
Meekly the prayer was begun, but ended in fervent entreaty!
Then from their houses in haste came forth the Pilgrims of Plymouth,
Men and women and children, all hurrying down to the sea-shore,
Eager, with tearful eyes, to say farewell to the *Mayflower*,
Homeward bound o'er the sea, and leaving them here in the desert.

- * * * * *
4. Meanwhile the master, alert, but with dignified air and important,
Scanning with watchful eye the tide, and the wind, and the weather,
Walked about on the sands; and the people crowded around him,
Saying a few last words, and enforcing his careful remembrance.
Then, taking each by the hand as if he were grasping a tiller,
Into the boat he sprang, and in haste shoved off to his vessel,
Glad in his heart to get rid of all this worry and flurry.....
Lost in the sound of the oars was the last farewell of the Pilgrims.

- O strong hearts and true! not one went back in the *Mayflower*!
No, not one looked back, who had set his hand to this ploughing!

5. Soon were heard on board the shouts and songs of the sailors
Heaving the windlass round, and hoisting the ponderous anchor.
Then the yards were braced, and all sails set to the west wind,

Blowing steady and strong; and the *Mayflower* sailed from the harbour,
 Rounded the point of the Gurnet, and leaving far to the south-ward
 Island and cape of sand, and the field of the first encounter,
 Took the wind on her quarter and stood for the open Atlantic,
 Borne on the send of the sea and the swelling hearts of the Pilgrims.

6. Long in silence they watched the receding sail of the vessel,
 Much endeared to them all, as something living and human;
 Then, as if filled with the Spirit, and wrapped in a vision prophetic,
 Baring his hoary head, the excellent Elder of Plymouth
 Said, "Let us pray!" and they prayed, and thanked the Lord,
 and took courage. H. W. LONGFELLOW.

New Words in this Lesson.

braced	ex'-cel-lent	pon'-der-ous	scan'-ning
chim'-neys	fer'-vent	pro'-phet-ic	slum'-ber-ing
dig'-ni-fied	hoar'-y	pur'-ple	vis'-ion
en-deared'	hymns	re-cēd'-ing	wind'-lass

Notes and Meanings.

- | | |
|---|--|
| <p>1 Slumbering, quiet; sleeping.
 Plymouth, the American Plymouth;
 the settlement of the Pilgrims.
 Blowing fair, from the west.
 2 Consecrated, made holy; sanctified.
 3 Pervent, burning; earnest.
 4 Dignified, marked with dignity.
 Scanning, examining carefully.
 Enforcing his careful remembrance, impressing on him the messages he was to carry to friends at home.</p> | <p>5 Windlass, a roller for winding the rope or chain of the anchor.
 Ponderous, heavy.
 Braced, fastened to the side of the ship; hauled tight.
 The Gurnet, the headland forming one side of the bay opposite Plymouth.
 6 Receding, retiring; withdrawing.
 H. W. Longfellow, the most popular of American poets: born 1807; died 1882.</p> |
|---|--|

5. THE KING AND THE PARLIAMENT.

1. **Grievances of the Commons.**—For long after James's accession, the Commons showed a calm but determined spirit. James would have dispensed with Parliaments altogether, had that been possible; but his personal extravagance forced him

to go to them for supplies. By means of their right to withhold these, now well established, the Commons maintained their position. They began now to act on the rule,—No supplies until grievances are redressed. This drove the King to invent new modes of filling his treasury. The fines of the Star Chamber were increased; titles of nobility were openly sold. At the same time the old grievances of "purveyance" and "monopolies" were continued.

2. James's first Parliament sat from 1604 till 1611. In the latter year, the House of Commons addressed the King on the subject of illegal taxation. The King dissolved 1611 Parliament, and governed without one for three years. In 1614 he was forced by want of money to call a second Parliament. In this Parliament there appeared for the first time some of those who became leaders in the 1614 coming struggle—John Pym and John Eliot, as well as Thomas Wentworth, who afterwards went over to the side of the Crown, and became the famous Earl of Strafford.

3. When the King asked the Commons for supplies, they demanded that he should first give up illegal taxation. James forthwith dissolved the Parliament, and sent four of the leading members to the Tower. He then raised money by benevolences, and ruled as an absolute Monarch for the next seven years.

4. **James visits Scotland.**—When James in 1617 visited Scotland for the only time after the union, he was received with great joy. But the real purpose of his visit 1617 was to push forward his scheme of Episcopacy. In the following year a General Assembly convened at Perth was forced to adopt the forms of the Episcopal Church. The Five Articles of Perth, by which these changes were 1618 made, were afterwards confirmed by the Scottish Parliament. From that time forth the Bishops busied themselves in carrying out the Articles—especially in deposing Presbyterian ministers.

5. **Fall of Lord Bacon.**—Parliament was again called together in 1621. The Commons at once attacked the monopolies. Several Court favourites were impeached at the bar of the House of Lords. The Commons next attacked the corruption of justice, selecting Lord Bacon as their victim. Created

Chancellor in 1618, he had followed the evil practice of the time, and had accepted presents from suitors in his court.



LORD BACON.

Having confessed his guilt, he was sentenced to imprisonment and a heavy fine. The King remitted the sentence; but Bacon was banished from the Court, and died at his country house in 1626.

6. Protest of the Commons.

—During the session of 1621, the contest between King and Commons reached its first crisis. Sir Edward Coke proposed a petition against the intended marriage of Prince Charles with the Infanta of Spain, and a stormy debate followed. In consequence of that, the King threatened the leaders of the Opposition with the Tower. Thereupon the Commons recorded in the Journals of their House a famous protest, claiming, "*That the liberties, franchises, privileges, and jurisdictions of Parliament, are the ancient and undoubted birthright and inheritance of the subjects of England.*" James with his own hand tore this resolution out of the Journals, and dissolved the Parliament. Several of the leading members of the House of Commons (including Edward Coke and John Pym), and a few also of the Lords, were committed to prison.

7. After all, the match, so hateful to the nation, was never completed. Charles and the Duke of Buckingham undertook a journey to Spain in disguise, in order that the Prince might see his bride-elect. But a quarrel between Buckingham and 1623 the Spanish minister, Olivarez, broke off the match; and a French bride was found for Charles instead. The result was hailed with joy in England; and when, in the following year, James called a new Parliament, and declared war against Spain, the Commons eagerly voted £300,000 for that purpose. In 1625, James died of gout and ague, aged fifty-nine.

8. Character of James.—Pedantry, obstinacy, and favouritism were leading features in the character of James. Hunting, cock-fighting, and pleasure parties occupied much of his time; but in his leisure he wrote a few books which entitle him to a place in the roll of royal authors. His appearance was ungainly, his gait awkward, his dress slovenly, and his conceit boundless.

New Words in this Lesson.

a'gue	cri'sis	griev'ances	ped'ant-ry
awk'ward	dis-solved'	im-pris'on-ment	pur-vey'ance
be-nev'o-lenç-es	ex-trav'a-gance	in-her'i-tance	res-o-lu'tion
Chan'cel-lor	fa'vour-it-ism	ju-ris-dic'tions	slov'en-ly
cor-rup'tion	fran-chis-es	ob'sti-naç-y	suit'ors

Notes and Meanings.

- Grievances, hardships.
Purveyance, the right of the King to compel his subjects to make provision for himself and his Court.
Monopolies, monopoly (from Gr. *monos*, alone; *pōlēō*, I sell) is the exclusive right to deal in a particular commodity. The value was fixed by law, and the King had a preference over other purchasers.
- Dissolved, broke up; sent away.
- Benevolences, forced loans; "free-will offerings" which the people were compelled to make.
- Five Articles. They were:—1. Kneeling at the communion; 2. Private administration of the communion to sick persons; 3. Private administration of baptism; 4. Confirmation of the young by bishops;
- Observance of the five great festivals of the Episcopal Church.
- Corruption, impurity.
Lord Bacon, author of the *Novum Organum*, and of a famous collection of *Essays*. He was one of the greatest thinkers of the time.
Suitors, persons who sue or petition.
- Infanta, the eldest daughter of the King of Spain.
Journals, official records.
Franchises, political rights.
Privileges, exceptional rights.
Jurisdictions, legal powers.
Inheritance, property descending from father to son.
- A French bride, Henrietta-Maria, daughter of the King of France.
- Pedantry, vanity of learning.
Obstinacy, stubbornness.

Questions:—1. On what rule did the Commons Act? To what did this drive James? 2. Why did he dissolve his first Parliament? When was his second called? 3. Why was it dismissed? 4. When did James visit Scotland? What was his purpose? 5. For what was Bacon punished? 6. What was the famous protest of the Commons in 1621? 7. How was the marriage of Charles with the Infanta broken off? 8. What was James's character?

CHARLES I.

Born 1600 A.D. Son of James I. Married Henrietta Maria of France—Reigned 1625-1649 A.D.

SUMMARY OF THE REIGN.

1625. The Spanish War continues—It is opposed by the majority of the Commons—Enraged at its refusal of sufficient supplies, Charles dissolves the Parliament, and raises money by a general loan—His advisers are Queen Henrietta and Buckingham.
1626. Charles's second Parliament, refusing supplies, and preparing to impeach Buckingham, is dissolved without passing an Act.
1627. The English help the French Huguenots against Richelieu.
1628. Buckingham is assassinated at Portsmouth—Charles's third Parliament meets—Draws up the Petition of Right—Charles assents to it, but disregards it.
1629. The Speaker is held in the high until the Commons pass a resolution against innovations in religion and illegal taxation—The King dissolves Parliament, and sends the leaders to the Tower.
1630. Peace made with France and Spain—Strafford and Laud are the King's chief advisers.
1631. Strafford tries the Earl of his The rough scheme in Ireland.
1633. Laud is made Archbishop, and uses the High Commission Court—The Star Chamber and the Council of York are also used—Charles goes to Scotland, and is driven out of Edinburgh.
1634. Ship-money is revived—The King's peace, and causes much discontent.
1637. Decision against John Hampden for refusing to pay ship-money—Laud's reduced in Scotland, and leads to riots in Edinburgh.
1638. The Four Bishops and elsewhere, burghers, and clergy) are formed, and the National Covenant is drawn up and signed—The Glasgow Assembly reverses the Five Articles of Perth (1618), and abolishes Episcopacy.
1639. The Scots under Alexander Leslie encamp on Duns Law—Charles makes an agreement with them, and both armies are disbanded.
1640. The fourth (or "Short") Parliament of Charles meets—Dissolved in three weeks—A Scottish army seizes Newcastle—Council of Peers at York—Charles calls his fifth (the "Long") Parliament—Strafford thrown into the Tower.
1641. Parliament resolves that it shall not be dissolved without its own consent—Laud sent to the Tower—Star Chamber, High Commission Court, and Council of York abolished—Trial of Strafford begun—Impeachment abandoned and Attainder adopted—Bill passes—Strafford executed (May 12)—The Commons issue The Grand Remonstrance.
1642. The King orders the impeachment of five members of the Commons—He demands their surrender, but they escape to the city—Great excitement in London—The King goes to Hampton Court—The Queen flees to Holland with the crown jewels—Charles refuses his consent to the Militia Bill—The Governor of Hull refuses to open the gates to Charles (April 23)—Charles unfurls his standard at Nottingham (August 22)—Essex commands the Roundheads, Rupert the Royalist cavalry—Battle of Edgehill, indecisive—Charles winters at Oxford.

1643. Royalists take Bristol—Essex raises the siege of Gloucester, and defeats the Royalists at Newbury—Hampden killed at Chalgrove—Oliver Cromwell trains his Ironsides—The Solemn League and Covenant signed by the English and Scottish Parliaments, and the two Leslies enter England with 20,000 troops (1644)—Parliament levies excise duties to meet the expense of the war.
1644. Charles defeats Waller at Cropredy Bridge—The Scots and the Roundheads gain Marston Moor—York and Newcastle yield to the Parliament—Charles is defeated in the second Battle of Newbury—Trial and condemnation of Laud.
1645. Execution of Laud—The Independents pass the Self-denying Ordinance, but it does not apply to Cromwell—Fairfax utterly defeats the Royalists at Naseby—Leslie defeats Montrose at Philiphaugh.
1646. Charles surrenders to the Scots at Newark—They remove with him to Newcastle.
1647. The Scots receive the arrears of their pay, £400,000—Charles is transferred to the English Parliament—Seized by Cornet Joyce, he is lodged in Hampton Court—Escapes to Carisbrooke Castle.
1648. The Scots under the Duke of Hamilton enter Lancashire to join the Independents—Cromwell defeats them at Preston, and marches to Edinburgh—Returning to London, he orders Colonel Pride to arrest the Parliament of Presbyterians.
1649. The "Rump" appoints a High Court of Justice for the trial of the King—After eight days he is sentenced to death—Executed January 30.

6. THE STRUGGLE RENEWED.

1. Charles's first Parliament.—The English War was continued under Charles, who had learned to fight from his father; and the "divine right" of kings. To meet the cost of the war, Charles asked his first Parliament for a supply; but the majority of the Commons were Puritans, and looking with a jealous eye on the Queen, who as a 1625 Roman Catholic and a Frenchwoman, they regarded with £140,000, with tunnage and poundage for one year. Enraged by this want of confidence, and especially at an charge brought against the Duke of Buckingham, his favourite, the King dissolved the Parliament in a fortnight.

2. He then raised money by a general loan on his own authority, and sent a fleet and an army against Spain. His chief advisers in the matter were the Queen and the Duke of Buckingham. Henrietta hated the Puritans; and she had inherited from her father, a strong attachment to absolute power. He never ceased, during his

husband's life-time, to urge him on in the danger which his own temper inclined him.

3. **Charles's second Parliament.**—The second Parliament, meeting in 1626 prepared to impeach Buckingham. To shield his favourite the King made himself responsible for his act. The Commons insisted that the King's



CHARLES I.

ministers were responsible to Parliament, and demanded Buckingham's dismissal. The King replied by dissolving the Parliament before it had passed a single Act. The usual illegal taxation followed. Money was raised by forced loans or benevolences. London and other seaports were required to furnish ships. Men were pressed as seamen and soldiers, and were put

under martial law. Many who resisted these measures were imprisoned.

4. **War with France.**—To add to the difficulties of Charles, a war with France began. Buckingham was again the cause.

He quarrelled with Cardinal Richelieu, the great minister of France, who forbade the Duke ever again to enter the

French dominions. One of the grand objects of the Cardinal's government was the restraining of the Huguenots; and he was then engaged in besieging their stronghold, La Rochelle on the Bay of Biscay. Foiled in his attempts to take the city on the land side, he built a mole half a mile long across the mouth of the harbour.

5. **Death of Buckingham.**—Twice the English tried to relieve the besieged. Buckingham led the first expedition, the King hoping to revive his popularity by giving him the lead in a popular cause; but he returned, having lost almost half his men. While at Portsmouth, preparing to sail with a second expedition, he was stabbed to the heart by Lieutenant Felton, who had been dismissed from the service. Earl Lindesay led the fleet to Rochelle; but no effort could pierce the mole, and the city surrendered to Richelieu in 1627.

6. **Charles's third Parliament.**—In the same year Charles called his third Parliament. Before granting any money, the Commons drew up a Bill—the famous Petition of Right—requiring the King to levy no taxes without consent of Parliament, to detain no one in prison without trial, and not to billet soldiers in private houses. An assent was wrung from the reluctant Charles (June 7); and the Commons, rejoicing in this second great charter of English liberty, voted him five subsidies,—equal to nearly £400,000. But in three weeks when the session closed, it was seen that the King did not mean to be bound by the solemn promise he had made.

7. The next movement of the Commons was made on behalf of religious freedom. In the following session, they resolved to maintain the Articles of Religion as ratified by Parliament. The Speaker (Finch) announced the King's order of an adjournment. He was forcibly held in the chair till the House had voted every innovator in religion and every minister who levied taxes without consent of Parliament to be 'a capital enemy to the kingdom and commonwealth.' The Parliament was at once dissolved (March 10), and nine of its leading members were thrown into prison, including Sir John Eliot, who died there. Sensible that his domestic policy would need all his energies, Charles then made peace with Spain and France.

New Words in this Lesson.

ad-journ'ment	dis-missed'	ma-jor-i-ty	re-luc'-tant
an-nounced'	fōr'-ci-bly	mar'-tial	re-spon'-si-ble
at-tach'ment	in-her'-it-ed	pop-u-lar-i-ty	sen'-si-ble
com'-mon-wealth	in'-no-va-tor	pound'-age	sut'-si-dies
dis-mis'-sal	Lieu-ten'-ant	rat'-i-fied	tun'-nage

Notes and Meanings.

- | | |
|---|---|
| <p>1 The majority, the greater number.
Tonnage and poundage, import duties on every <i>tun</i> of wine and on every <i>pound</i> of certain commodities introduced into England. These were the origin of the "Customs."
3 Impeach, charge with treason.
Martial law, the law that prevails in the army during a time of war.</p> | <p>4 The Huguenots, French Protestants.
A mole, a bank or mound.
5 Popularity, favour with the people.
6 Second Great Charter, Magna Carta being the first.
7 Innovator, one who introduces new customs.
A capital enemy, an enemy deserving of death.
Sensible, feeling convinced.</p> |
|---|---|

Questions:—1. Why did Charles dismiss his first Parliament? 2. How did he raise money? Who were his advisers? 3. Why did he quarrel with his second Parliament? What followed? 4. In what siege was Cardinal Richelieu then engaged? 5. Who was sent to relieve the place? What was the end of Buckingham? 6. When did Charles's third Parliament meet? What famous Bill did it pass? 7. What happened in the Commons when Speaker Finch announced the King's order for an adjournment?

7. STRAFFORD AND LAUD.

1. **Ruling without a Parliament.**—For eleven years (1629 to 1640) no Parliament was called. Thomas Wentworth, Earl of Strafford, who had at first been on the popular side, and William Laud, Archbishop of Canterbury, were the principal Ministers of Charles during these years. Strafford devised a scheme—called in his letters "Thorough"—to secure for Charles absolute power by means of a standing army. Laud directed the affairs of the Church. The nation groaned under the tyranny of three illegal tribunals, directed chiefly by these two ministers,—the Star Chamber, the High Commission Court, and the Council of York.

2. **Ship-money.**—Of all the illegal taxes levied by Charles, ship-money was the most notorious. It was revived in 1634; but the spirit of the nation revolted against the injustice of levying a war-tax during profound peace, and a sea-port tax on inland places. Moreover, it was collected by authority of the King alone. In 1637, John Hampden, a gentleman of Buckinghamshire, refused to pay the tax. The case was tried in the Court of Exchequer, and a majority of the Judges gave their decision against Hampden.

3. **Emigration.**—Through all these years a great emigration of the Puritans had been draining England of her best blood.

The Pilgrim Fathers had set the example in the previous reign. And now—watched even in their houses by the spies of Laud, and dragged before the High Commission—what wonder is it that, much as they loved England, the Puritans chose rather a home in the wilds of America, where they enjoyed complete religious freedom?

4. **The Long Parliament.**—Charles was forced in 1640 to call the Short Parliament (his fourth); but being met with the same demands as before, he soon dissolved it. In despair, he called a Council of Peers at York, and laid before them the state of the country. The Peers advised him to call another Parliament. Charles accordingly summoned the Lords and the Commons to meet him for the fifth time and the memorable Long Parliament began its sittings on November 30, 1640. The majority of the members were non-conformists, and Pym was leader of the popular or country party.

5. The Commons at once set themselves vigorously to the work of reversing the tyrannical Acts of the previous eleven years. Strafford was thrown into the Tower, where Laud joined him a few months later. The Commons voted that a Parliament should be held at least every three years. They resolved that the Parliament then sitting should not be dissolved but by its own consent. They swept away all arbitrary tribunals, including the Star Chamber Court, the Court of High Commission, and the Council of York.

6. **Trial and Death of Strafford.**—The trial of Strafford was begun in Westminster Hall on the 22nd day of March 1641. The King sat unseen within a cabinet hung with curtains. On the second day, Pym, the leader of the impeachment, spoke long and weightily in support of the charges. He described the dreadful tyranny of Wentworth in Ireland, producing witnesses in support of all he said. Strafford was required to answer on the spot. He strove hard to show, with the dignified eloquence he could wield so well, that all the evils he had done heaped together could not make treason. The leaders were doubtful of success that they gave up the impeachment and proceeded against Strafford by Bill of Attainder.

7. His fate was decided by the notes of a speech, alleged to

have been made by him at a private Council, and on him in these words: "You have an army in Ireland that you may employ to reduce this kingdom to obedience." After the Bill of Attainder had passed the Commons, and the Lords, the consent of Charles was still necessary; but he hesitated. Strafford is said to have written a letter to the King beseeching his majesty to sign the Bill, in order to save the commonwealth. The King, after going through the form of asking advice from his Council, wrote the fatal letter. The scaffold stood on Tower Hill; Strafford laid his head on the block, and died (May 12, 1641). Before he was lighted London streets that night, and men rode off to the country, crying joyfully, "His head is off!"

New Words in this Lesson.

al-leged'	el-o-quence	mem-or-a-ble	re-vers'ing
ar-bi-tra-ry	em-i-gra'tion	no-to-ri-ous	sum'moned
At-tain'-der	hes-i-tat-ed	prin-ci-pal	tri-bu-nals
be-seech'-ing	im-peach'-ment	pro-ceed'-ed	ty-ran'-ni-cal
cab'-in-et	in-jus-tice	pro-found'	wit-ness-es

Notes and Meanings.

1 Earl of Strafford. As Sir Thomas Wentworth, he was a leader on the popular side in the early part of the struggle; but after the death of the Duke of Buckingham he went over to the Court party.

Absolute, unlimited.

Tribunals, courts.

Star Chamber. The room in which it met was so called from the *starra* or Jewish bonds formerly kept in it.

2 Ship-money. Before a permanent fleet existed, it was in the power of the King to require sea-ports to furnish him with war-ships, and maritime counties to supply money for their maintenance.

John Hampden, born at London,

1594; killed on Chalgrove-field, 1643.

3 Emigration, removing from one's native country to another land.

5 Tyrannical, cruelly severe; despotic. Arbitrary, having power in themselves; absolute.

6 Attainder. The difference between *impeachment* and *attainder* is one of form. An impeachment is a trial in which the Lords are the judges and the Commons are the accusers. In the case of attainder the procedure is by a Bill, which, like other Bills, requires to pass through both Houses, and receive the royal assent.

7 Hesitated, wavered.

Questions:—1. How long was England without a Parliament? Who were Charles's Ministers then? 2. Why was ship-money objected to? 3. Why did many persons emigrate? 4. What led to the calling of the Long Parliament? 5. What work did it begin? 6. Who led the impeachment of Strafford? Why was it changed to attainder? 7. What decided Strafford's fate? Where was he executed?

8. THE EMIGRANTS IN THE BERMUDAS.

[In the time of Archbishop Laud, many clergymen who were unwilling to conform to the discipline and ceremonies of the English Church emigrated to the Bermudas. In consequence of this, a proclamation was issued in 1635, "against departing out of the realm without licence." The following hymn is supposed to be sung by Puritan refugees or emigrants.]

1. Where the remote Bermuda ride
In the ocean's bosom unespied,
From a small boat that rowed along,
The listening winds received this song:—

"What should we do but sing His praise
That led us through the watery maze
Unto an isle so long unknown,
And yet far kinder than our own?"

"Where He the huge sea-monsters racks,
That lift the deep upon their back
He lands us on a grassy stage,
Safe from the storm, and prelates' rage.

2. "He gave us this eternal spring
Which here enamels everything;
And sends the fowls to us in care,
On daily visits through the air.

"He hangs in shades the orange bright,
Like golden lamps in a green night;
And does in the pomegranates close
Jewels more rich than Ormuz hews.

"He makes the figs our mouth to meet,
And throws the melon at our feet;
But apples plants of such a price,
No tree could ever bear them twice.

3. "With cedars, chosen by His hand
From Lebanon, He tore the land;
And makes the hollow sea that roar
Proclaim the ambergris on shore.

"He cast—of which we rather boast—
The golden pearl upon our coast;
And in these rocks for us did frame
A temple where to sound His name.

4. "O let our voice His praise exalt,
Till it arrive at Heaven's vault;
Which then, perhaps, rebounding, may
Echo beyond the Mexique bay."

Thus sang they, in the English boat,
A holy and a cheerful note;
And all the way, to guide their chime,
With falling oars they kept the time.

ANDREW MARVELL.

New Words in this Lesson.

am-ber-gris	con-form'	en-am-els	prel-ates
ce-dars	dis-ci-pline	li-cence	proc-la-ma-tion
cer-le-mon-ies	em-i-grants	pome-gran-ates	un-es-pied'

Notes and Meanings.

- Discipline, order; government. Ceremonies, forms of worship. Proclamation, order. Licence, leave; permission. Remote Bermudas. The Bermudas are a group of small islands and bare rocks, about 600 miles east of the coast of the United States. Sir George Somers, an English admiral, was wrecked there, and perished with most of his crew, in 1609. Hence they are sometimes called "Somers' Islands." Unespied, not seen.
- Enamels everything, makes everything look bright and fresh. Ormuz, an island in the Persian Gulf (strait of Ormuz) famous for its diamonds. Milton (*Paradise Lost*, ii. 1) represents Satan as seated "High on a throne of royal state, which far Outshone the wealth of Ormuz."
- Ambergris, gray amber—a fragrant substance obtained from the sperm-whale.
- Mexique bay, the Gulf of Mexico.

9. SCOTLAND UNDER CHARLES.

1. **Charles visits Edinburgh.**—French and Spanish wars, and troubles with his English Parliament, prevented Charles from visiting Scotland during the first eight years of his reign. In 1633, however, he visited Edinburgh, and was crowned in Holyrood Abbey church on June 18th. Though he made no

secret of his wish to carry out his father's design, he was received with unbounded delight. But his cold and repulsive manner disappointed the people; and his haughty 1633 and overbearing tone in the Parliament produced the worst possible impression in the country, especially among the upper classes.

2. **The Lords of the Articles.**—A change in the mode of electing the Lords of the Articles added to Charles' unpopularity. Formerly each estate appointed its own representatives, eight in number. Now the eight bishops were first elected by the whole body of bishops; then the eight bishops selected eight barons; lastly, the bishops and the barons together elected eight commoners. This secured that all the Lords of the Articles were friendly to the bishops.

3. **Laud's Service Book.**—Neither Parliament nor General Assembly met in Scotland for several years after Charles' visit. The Church was governed by the Bishops. The State was managed by the Privy Council, with Archbishop Spottiswood as Chancellor. In 1637 Laud's Church Service Book was ordered to be used in all churches. When the Dean of Edinburgh 1637 began to read the litany from it in St. Giles' Church, a dangerous riot took place. The excitement spread over the country. Crowds of all classes flocked to Edinburgh to petition the King against the Service Book. The prayer of these petitions Charles stubbornly refused.

4. **The National Covenant.**—A decisive step was then taken. The Four Tables—separate committees of nobles, gentry, burghers, and clergymen—were formed. The National 1638 Covenant was drawn up, and was signed by thousands, who bound themselves to defend their religion and freedom of conscience. A General Assembly which met at Glasgow continued its sittings after the King had ordered it to be dissolved; and it declared the Assembly of 1618, which had adopted the Five Articles of Perth, to have been "unfree, unlawful, and null."

5. **Civil War.**—Both the Tables and the King resolved to appeal to the sword; the former to enforce the Covenant in the north of Scotland, where it had not been accepted; the latter to punish his rebellious subjects. The Tables sent James Graham,

Earl of Montrose, to Aberdeen, where he had an army, which captured the Earl of Huntly, the head of the Cavalier or "Maligant," and carried him to Edinburgh a prisoner (May). In a skirmish at Turriff (called the Trot of Turriff) the 1639 Covenanters were scattered with some loss, and there the first blood was drawn in the strife between Charles and his people. Montrose was again sent north, defeated the Maligants at Bridge of Dee, and recovered Aberdeen, which had fallen into their hands.

6. **Duns Law.**—Charles then prepared to send an army to Scotland to subdue it. When the Scots learned this, they raised a force of twenty-three thousand men. This army, with General Alexander Leslie at its head, marched to Duns Law.



The Law is a round hill covered with grass and broom, the top forming a little plain or table-land about a quarter of a mile in length, and the same in breadth. Leslie had set his eye on it as a position of great strength, lying in the middle between the two ways leading to Edinburgh—the Haddington way on the east, and the Kelso way on the west; and there he encamped.

7. The General had his quarters in the Castle of Duns, at the foot of the hill. Daily in its great hall he received at his table his chief officers—high-hearted noblemen and gentlemen, who were putting land and life in jeopardy for freedom of conscience. Each evening the General rode round the hill to see

the watch set. Morning and evening the drums called the whole army to prayers under the tent of the sky. All day long the soldiers—stout, brisk fellows, in hodden-gray, with knots of blue ribbons at their bonnets—were busy in exercise of arms.

8. When King Charles found that the army of the Scots was stronger and better than his, he adopted an ingenious plan for avoiding a conflict. He sent Robert Leslie, a Scotsman, and one of his domestics, over to the camp at Duns in an easy way. Leslie got into conversation with some of the Scots. The English army, he said, was increasing so fast that the Scots were in hazard of being swallowed up! He therefore, as their countryman and friend, advised them to petition the King once more.

9. The Scots understood Mr. Leslie well enough. They knew perfectly the advantage which they had over the King; but such was their regard for his honour that they at once sent off the Earl of Dunfermline to break his fall with a petition. The Earl was well received. Letters passed between the two camps. Matters, in short, shaped so well that commissioners from the Scots passed to the King's camp to treat with his Majesty.

10. **Peace.**—At last terms of peace were arranged, so very favourable to the King, that the Scots might well have been astonished at their own moderation. Two days after the articles were signed, the Scots burned their camp on Duns Law, and disbanded their army. They kept, however, their best officers on half-pay, to be ready in case of need; having their own suspicions, shrewd men as they were.

11. **Charles's second Visit to Scotland.**—In 1640 Charles reassembled his army. The Scots did the same, and anticipated his movements by marching into England and taking possession of Newcastle. Charles, whose quarrel with his English Parliament was becoming more and more serious, then 1641 agreed to a lasting treaty. Commissioners from England and Scotland met to arrange its terms, and it was concluded in 1641. In the same year Charles again visited Scotland, and did his utmost to make friends among the Covenanters by heaping favours on their leaders.

New Words in this Lesson.

an-ti-ci-pat-ed	de-ci-sive	lit-an-y	rep-re-sen-ta-tives
as-ton-ish-ed	dis-ap-point-ed	ma-lig-nants	re-puls-ive
com-mit-tees	ex-cite-ment	mod-er-a-tion	shrewd
con-flict	im-pres-sion	re-as-sem-bled	sus-pi-cions
con-ver-sa-tion	jeop-ar-dy	re-bell-i-ous	un-pop-u-lar-i-ty

Notes and Meanings.

- 1 Repulsive, forbidding.
- 2 Lords of the Articles, a committee of Members of Parliament appointed at the beginning of each session to consider what Bills should be submitted to the Estates for their approval. It thus possessed great power.
- 3 Litany, a collection of prayers.
- 4 The National Covenant. The different Scottish Covenants must be carefully distinguished. The First and Second Covenants were signed by the Lords of the Congregation in 1557 and 1559 respectively. The National Covenant was drawn up by the Four Tables in 1638, and was signed by thousands all over the country. The Solemn League and

Covenant, which was signed in 1643, was really a treaty pledging the Scottish Presbyterians and the English Parliament to mutual defence.

General Assembly, the Supreme Court of the Church.

- 5 Malignants. The name was applied by the Puritans in England and by the Covenanters in Scotland to the supporters of Charles.

Turriff, in Aberdeenshire, south-east of Banff.

- 6 Duns, a town in Berwickshire.

- 7 Jeopardy, risk; hazard.

Hodden-gray, coarse cloth having the natural colour of wool.

- 8 Domestic, household staff.

- 10 Moderation, forbearance.

Questions:—1. When did Charles visit Edinburgh? How was he received? 2. What change was made in the election of the Lords of the Articles? 3. To what did the use of Laud's Service Book lead? 4. When was the National Covenant drawn up? What did the General Assembly do? 5. Where was the first blood drawn, in the strife between Charles and his people? 6. Where did Leslie post his army? 7. How did the soldiers occupy themselves? 8. How did Charles avoid a conflict? 9. What did the Scots do? 10. What was the nature of the peace? 11. When did Charles visit Scotland a second time? Whose favour did he try to secure?

10. THE FIVE MEMBERS.

1. **The Grand Remonstrance.**—When the English Parliament reassembled in October 1641, there were two distinct parties in the House of Commons—a Court party, and a Country party. The King had friends in Lord Falkland and Edward Hyde, afterwards Earl of Clarendon; Hampden and Pym were of course the leaders of the Opposition. When the document called The Grand Remonstrance, which put on record all the misgovernment of the previous sixteen

Nov. 22,
1641

years, came to be discussed, the contest waxed hot and personal. A majority of eleven passed the Remonstrance, and it was presented to the King. It was afterward printed and scattered over the land, that the nation might know what the Parliament had already done, and what remained for it to do.

2. **Roundheads and Cavaliers: the Five Members.**—Meanwhile, signs of a storm appeared. The apprentice and the citizens, thronging to Westminster during the Christmas holidays, came to blows with the soldiers of the King; and out of the tumult arose those historic nicknames, "Roundhead" and "Cavalier." A fatal thought then entered the King's head. In utter defiance of legal form, he instructed his Attorney-General to impeach five members of the Commons, and one of the Lords. On January 3, 1642, the King's Sergeant-at-Arms entered the House of Commons with a royal

Jan. 3,
1642

message to the Speaker, requiring that five members, whose names he distinctly pronounced—Denzil Hollis, Sir Arthur Haselrig, John Pym, John Hampden, and William Strode—should be given up, as guilty of high treason. One member of the House of Lords—Lord Kimbolton—was included in the charge.

3. The House appointed a deputation of four to carry a message to the King, intimating that an answer would be returned as speedily as the importance of the matter would allow, and that the members were ready



JOHN HAMPDEN.

Questions:—1. What were the two parties in the Parliament of 1641? What was the Grand Remonstrance? 2. What did Charles instruct the Attorney-General to do? What did the Sergeant-at-Arms demand? 3. What message was sent to the King? 4. What did the Five do, when they heard of the King's approach? 5. What answer did the Speaker make to the royal questions? 6. How did the King try to secure the Five? 7. When did the Five return to the House in triumph? 8. What was the final question between the King and the Parliament?

11. THE CIVIL WAR.

1. **The Royal Standard unfurled.**—Three months after his flight from London, Charles presented himself before Hull, and demanded admission. Sir John Hotham, the Governor, refused to open the gates; and Charles retired to York. The Commons by a majority approved of Hotham's conduct; but the Royalist minority, comprising 32 Peers and 60 Commoners, and including Falkland and Hyde, withdrew and joined Charles at York. Conciliation was now hopeless. On the 22nd of August—a day of wind and storm—Charles unfurled the royal standard on the Castle Hill of Nottingham, and ten thousand men gathered around it.

2. **The two Armies.**—The soldiers of the King were gentlemen, well mounted, and skilled in the use of arms; but he was badly supplied with artillery and ammunition, and depended for money nearly altogether on the loyalty of his Cavaliers. The ranks of the Parliament were filled with ploughboys and tradesmen, as yet raw and untrained; but the possession of London and the Thames, along with the power of levying taxes, gave the Commons decided advantage in a continued war.

3. **Edgehill.**—The King in person commanded the Cavaliers; the Earl of Essex was chosen to lead the Roundheads. Prince Rupert, the nephew of Charles, led the Royalist cavalry. Oct. 23, 1642, The opening battle was fought at Edgehill in Warwickshire on Sunday, October 23rd; but it decided nothing, though it checked the King's march on London. During the winter Charles remained at Oxford.

4. **Siege of Gloucester.**—The campaign of 1643 was marked by several important events. In a skirmish with Rupert's cavalry at Chalgrove (June 18), Hampden was mortally



PLACES OF INTEREST.

1642. Hull.
" Nottingham.
" Edgehill.
" Oxford.
1643. Chalgrove.
" Bristol.

1643. Gloucester.
" Newbury (1).
1644. Cropredy Bridge.
" Marston Moor.
" York.
" Newcastle.

1644. Newbury (2).
1645. Naseby.
" Philiphaugh.
1646. Newark.
1647. Carisbrooke Castle.
1648. Preston.

wounded. His death a few days afterwards was a serious blow to the popular cause. A month later, Bristol, then the second city in the kingdom, surrendered to Prince Rupert. In the flush of this triumph, Charles laid siege to Gloucester; but just when success seemed sure, Essex moved rapidly from London with all the train-bands and raised the siege. This siege was the turning-point of the strife.

Thenceforward the cause of the Parliament grew strong. On his march back to London, Essex was followed by Charles, who overtook him at Newbury. There a desperate fight took place. Essex's cavalry was routed, but his infantry stood firm, and the King was defeated with great loss, including that of Lord Falkland, his Secretary of State.

5. **Oliver Cromwell.**—A greater soldier and statesman than



OLIVER CROMWELL.

either Hampden or Falkland was already in the field. At Edgehill, a captain of horse, named Oliver Cromwell, had fought in the army of the Parliament. He was then above forty years of age, and had long led a peaceful country life in his native shire of Huntingdon. Among the members of the Long Parliament he

was known chiefly by his slovenly dress, of Puritan cut and colour, and by his strange, rough, rambling speeches.

6. Cromwell saw that the secret of the King's early success lay in the training and discipline of his troops; and he resolved

that the clownish soldiers of the Parliament should soon be more than a match for the royal Cavaliers. He began with his own regiment; for he was now Colonel Cromwell. Filling its ranks with sedate and God-fearing men, he placed them under a system of drill and discipline so strict that they soon became celebrated as the Ironsides of Colonel Cromwell.

7. **The Solemn League and Covenant.**—When the civil war broke out in England, the Scots naturally made common cause with the Parliament against the King. In October 1642, the Parliament applied to the Scots for their assistance. In July 1643, Commissioners from the Scottish Parliament arrived in London, and in September the Solemn League and Covenant was ratified by the Parliaments of England and Scotland. The English Parliament was led to desire the aid of the Scots by the appeal of Charles to the Irish for help—a step which lost him not a few of his supporters in England. In the League, the Parliaments pledged themselves to the union of the two kingdoms on the basis of uniformity of religion, the abolition of Prelacy, and the freedom of Parliament.

8. **Marston Moor.**—In terms of the League, twenty thousand Scottish troops crossed the Border in the beginning of 1644, under the two Leslie's, Alexander and David. They failed in an attack on Newcastle, but they took Sunderland, and were there blockaded by the Marquis of Newcastle. In the south, **July 2, 1644** the soldiers of the Parliament suffered many calamities, especially at Cropredy Bridge, in Oxfordshire, where Charles routed with great loss a force under Sir William Waller. But in the north, on Marston Moor, the Roundheads, aided by the Scots, gained a brilliant victory. On that day Cromwell and his Ironsides swept all before them. Rupert and his cavalry, victors in many a dashing charge, could not withstand the terrible onset of these Puritan dragoons.

9. The immediate result of the victory was the capture of York and Newcastle by the troops of the Parliament. A second battle of Newbury, fought towards the close of the campaign, ended in the defeat of Charles. The Earl of Manchester's refusal to pursue the King's broken columns led to a quarrel between him and Cromwell.

New Words in this Lesson.

ab-o-lit'ion	cam-paign'	Col'onel	dra-goons'
am-mu-ni'tion	cel'e-brat-ed	com-pris'ing	reg'i-ment
ca-lam-i-ties	clown-ish	con-cil-i-a'tion	se-date'

Notes and Meanings.

- 1 Hull, on the Humber at the mouth of the Hull in Yorkshire. It is properly called Kingston-on-Hull. Conciliation, a peaceful settlement.
- 2 Ammunition, powder and shot.
- 3 Earl of Essex, Robert Devereux. Son of the Earl of Essex who was a favourite of Queen Elizabeth, and was beheaded in 1601. Born 1592; died 1646.
- Prince Rupert, a son of Charles's sister Elizabeth, who married Frederick the Elector-Palatine. His sister Sophia was the mother of George I. (See Table, p. 99.)
- Edgehill, or Kineton, a small village in Warwickshire. [of Oxford.
- 4 Chalgrove, in Berkshire, south-east Newbury, in Berkshire.
- 6 Discipline, good order.
- 7 Solemn League and Covenant. Different from the National Covenant. (See Note 4, p. 40.)
- 8 Two Leslie's. Alexander was made Earl of Leven in 1641. It was to him that Charles surrendered at Newark in 1646. He died in 1662. David was Alexander's nephew. He was a son of Patrick Leslie of Pitcairly. He was created Lord Newark by Charles II. in 1661. He died in 1682.
- Marston Moor, in Yorkshire; 4 or 5 miles west of York.
- 9 Earl of Manchester, formerly Lord Kimbolton.

Questions:—1. When and where was the royal standard unfurled? 2. Of whom were the two armies respectively composed? 3. Who were the leaders? Where was the first battle fought? 4. Where did Hampden fall? What was the turning-point of the strife? 5. What great man was now in the field? 6. On what did he resolve? 7. What was the Solemn League and Covenant? 8. What great victory did the army of the Parliament gain in 1644? 9. What was its immediate result?

12. TRIUMPH OF THE PARLIAMENT.

1. **Death of Laud.**—During the greater part of 1644, the trial of Laud, who had been in prison since 1641, was going on. Charged with high treason, he was condemned by Act of Attainder in the last month of the year, and was executed in January 1645.

2. **The Independents.**—An offshoot from the Puritan party had been for some time taking shape and gathering strength in the nation. These were the Independents, of whom Cromwell was the chief. In religion, they held that every Christian congregation formed an independent Church of itself, and owed obedience to no synod or assembly. In politics, they desired

to see monarchy overthrown and a republic erected. They were called in their own day Root-and-branch Men.

3. By their means an Act called the Self-denying Ordinance was passed in April 1645: it forbade all members of Parliament to hold command in the army. Essex and Manchester were therefore removed; and Sir Thomas Fairfax was appointed Commander-in-chief: but Cromwell, though a member of Parliament, was soon called, with the rank of Lieutenant-General, to lead the cavalry, and became in reality, though not in name, the General of the entire army.

4. **Cromwell's New Model.**—Then Cromwell introduced his New Model, and organized that strange army by means of which he achieved all his glories. Officers and men met regularly in the tents and the barrack-rooms to pray. They neither gambled, nor drank, nor swore. They often sang hymns as they moved to battle. And when, in later days, they fought the battles of England on the Continent, the finest troops in Europe were scattered before their terrible charge.

5. **Naseby—Philiphaugh.**—The decisive battle of the Civil War was fought at Naseby, where the Royalist army was utterly routed by Fairfax. Charles himself was June 14 forced to seek shelter in Wales. While the Scottish army was in England, the Marquis of Montrose—who had now passed from the side of the Covenant to the side of the King—gathered a host of Highlanders and Irishmen, with which he overran the country, robbing and slaughtering without stint. Marching rapidly over the country, from Argyle to Forfar and from Stirling to Aberdeen, he gained six successive battles, and appeared to be complete master of Scotland. These successes gave the King some hope of maintaining his cause there; but that hope soon faded, when David Leslie defeated the Marquis at Philiphaugh. Rupert surrendered Bristol, and the unfortunate Charles returned to Oxford, and reopened negotiations with the Parliament.

6. The Parliament was thus triumphant; and it used its power to crush all who had formerly opposed it. Many bishops were cast into prison; hundreds of the clergy of the Church of England were turned out of their churches and their homes; the universities were in effect closed. But the Parliament was

no longer a united body. The division into Independents and Presbyterians was complete. Indeed, considering the difference in their aims, it was impossible that they could continue to work together. The Presbyterians desired only to limit the power of the King; the Independents were bent on the destruction of the throne.

7. **Surrender of the King.**—Charles, in the faint hope of regaining his position by the aid of the Presbyterians, 1646 surrendered himself to the Scottish army at Newark. The Scots removed to Newcastle, taking the King with them. They offered to support him if he would sign the National Covenant; but this he refused to do. Charles remained with the Scots at Newcastle for eight months, during which they were arranging with the English Parliament for the payment of arrears of pay due to the Scottish army. The sum was fixed at £400,000. When that sum was paid, 1647 the Scots gave up the King into the hands of the Commissioners of the Parliament (January 30), and then retired to Scotland.

8. **At Carisbrooke.**—Rapidly the plot thickened. Cornet Joyce, with a band of horse, acting under secret orders from Cromwell, seized the King at Holmby House in Northamptonshire. The royal prisoner, carried from castle to castle, found means at last to escape, and reached the Isle of Wight, in hope of crossing to the Continent; but being forced to take refuge in Carisbrooke Castle, he was there guarded more jealously than ever.

New Words in this Lesson.

a-chieved'	mon'-ar-chy	pol'i-tics	suc-ces'sive
ar-rears'	ne-go-ti-a'tions	re-al'i-ty	syn'-od
bar-rack	Or-di-nance	re-o'-pened	tri-um'-phant
gam'-bled	or-gan-ized	re-pub'-lic	u-ni-ver'-si-ties

Notes and Meanings.

- 2 **Monarchy**, government by a sovereign or single ruler. held command in the Parliament-ary army. Sir Thomas became Lord Fairfax in 1647.
- Republic**, government vested in representatives of the people.
- 3 **Sir Thomas Fairfax**, eldest son of Ferdinand, Lord Fairfax, who also 5 **Naseby**, in Northamptonshire, east of Birmingham.
- Marquis of Montrose**. James

Graham (born 1612) must not be confounded with John Graham of Claverhouse, Viscount Dundee, born 1650, the year in which Montrose died. After his defeat at Philiphaugh, Montrose went to Norway, and then to France. In 1650, he made a fruitless descent on the north of Scotland in behalf

of Charles II. He was captured, and was hanged at Edinburgh. Philiphaugh, near Melkirk.
6 Triumphant, victorious.
7 Newark, on the Trent; north-east of Nottingham.
Arrears, money due but not paid.
8 Carisbrooke, a castle and village in the north of the Isle of Wight.

Questions:—1. When did Laud die? 2. Who were the Independents? 3. What was the Self-denying Ordinance? 4. What was the character of Cromwell's army? 5. What was the decisive battle? Where was Montrose finally defeated? 6. How did Parliament use its power? 7. Where and to whom did Charles surrender? When did the Scots give him up to the Parliament? 8. Where did he escape to? Where was he carefully guarded?

13. THE BATTLE OF PHILIPPAUGH.

[The following ballad, long preserved by tradition in Selkirkshire before it was printed, coincides accurately with historical fact. The battle, as mentioned at page 49, was fought in 1645.]

1. On Philiphaugh a fray began,
At Hairhead-wood it ended;
The Scots out o'er the Grames they ran,
So merrily they bended.

Sir David from the Border cam,
Wi' heart and hand cam he;
Wi' him three thousand bonny Scots,
To bear him company.

Wi' him three thousand valiant men,
A noble sight to see!
A cloud o' mist them well concealed,
As close as e'er might be.

2. When they cam to the Lingly burn,
As daylight did appear,
They spied an aged father,
And he did draw them near.

"Come hither, aged father!"

Sir David he did cry,

"And tell me where Montrose lies,
With all his great army."

"But, first, you must come tell to me,
If friends or foes you be;
I fear you are Montrose's men,
Come from the north country."—

3. "No, we are none o' Montrose's men,
Nor e'er intend to be;
I am Sir David Leslie
That's speaking unto thee."—

"If you're Sir David Leslie,
As I think well you be,
I am sorry ye have brought so few
Into your company.

"There's fifteen thousand armed men
Encamped on yon lea;
Ye'll never be a bite to them,
For aught that I can see.

4. "But halve your men in equal parts,
Your purpose to fulfil;
Let one half keep the water-side,
The rest go round the hill.

"Your nether party fire must,
Then beat a flying drum;
And then they'll think the day's their ain,
And from the trench they'll come;

"Then, those that are behind them must
Give shot both great and small:
And so, between your armies twa,
Ye may make them to fall."—

"O were ye ever a soldier?"
Sir David Leslie said;—

"O yes; I was at Solway Flow,
Where we were all betrayed.

5. "Again I was at curst Dunbar,
And was a prisoner ta'en:
And mony a weary night and day
In prison I have lain."—

THE BATTLE OF PHILIPPAUGH.

"If ye will lead these men aright,
Rewarded shall ye be;
But if that ye a traitor prove,
I'll hang thee on a tree."—

"Sir, I will not a traitor prove:
Montrose has plundered me;
I'll do my best to banish him
Away from this country."—

6. He halved his men in equal parts,
His purpose to fulfil;
The one part kept the water-side,
The other went round the hill.

The nether party fired brisk,
Then turned and seemed to run;
And then they a' cam frae the trench,
And cried, "The day's our ain!"—

The rest then ran into the trench,
And loosed their cannons all:
And thus, between his armies twa,
He made them fast to fall.

Now, let us a' for Leslie pray,
And his brave company!
For they have vanquished great Montrose,
Our cruel enemy.

New Words in this Lesson.

ac-cu-rate-ly
aught

co-in-cides'

con-cealed'

ful-fil'

neth'er

pre-served'

van-quished

Notes and Meanings.

1 Coincides, agrees.

Accurately, exactly.

Philipphaugh, on the Yarrow, about
2 miles west of Selkirk.

Sir David, Sir David Leslie. (See
Note 8, p. 48.)

2 Lingly Burn, a brook which falls
into the Ettrick.

3 Lea, meadow-land.

Ye'll never be a bite to them, they
will destroy you without trouble.

4 Nether party, the lower party—that
going by the water-side.

Solway Flow, the rout of Solway
Mos, 1542.

5 Curst Dunbar, Dunbar Drove, 1650.
These references are examples of
"poetical licence."

14. DEATH OF THE KING.

1. **Hamilton's last Effort.**—There was still a moderate party in Scotland that was willing to make terms with the King. Having obtained from him a secret promise to accept the Covenant, they sent an army across the Border under the Duke of Hamilton (July 5). About the same time the

1648 Royalists of Essex and Kent began to stir. Leaving these to Fairfax, Cromwell pressed northward by rapid marches, and routed Hamilton at Preston in Lancashire (August 17). Cromwell then marched into Scotland, formed a league with the Marquis of Argyle and the extreme Covenanters, and established at Edinburgh a government hostile to Charles.

2. **Pride's Purge.**—During Cromwell's absence, threatening murmurs arose from the Presbyterians, who still formed the majority in the Parliament. On his return to London, Cromwell met these murmurs boldly and decisively. By his orders, Colonel Pride, on the morning of December 6th, 1648, surrounded the House with his troopers, and prevented the entrance of about two hundred Presbyterian members. This is called Pride's Purge. The remainder—about fifty Independents, known as the Rump—voted hearty thanks to Cromwell for his great services. Then the death of the King was resolved on.

3. **The High Court of Justice.**—A tribunal appointed by the Rump, and styled the High Court of Justice, met Jan. 20, 1649 in Westminster Hall for the trial of the King. The Peers had refused to take any part in the proceedings. The members of the court, of whom about sixty sat in judgment, were taken chiefly from the army, and from the Independent party of the Commons. A lawyer named John Bradshaw, a cousin of John Milton, the poet, was the president. The King, brought from St. James's Palace, was placed within the bar, and was there charged with tyranny, especially in waging war against his people.

4. **The Sentence.**—Never did Charles appear to greater advantage than on this occasion. Summoning up all that kingly dignity of which he was invested with no small share, he refused

to be tried by a tribunal created in defiance of the laws. Where, he asked, were the Peers, who alone, by an ancient maxim of the Constitution, could sit in judgment on a Peer? But all defence was useless, for the judges had already decided the matter among themselves. The case lasted seven days, and then sentence of death was pronounced.

5. **Whitehall.**—Three days later, on the 30th of January 1649, in front of the Banqueting House of Whitehall Palace, Charles Stewart was beheaded. Soldiers, horse and foot, surrounded the black scaffold, on which stood two masked Jan. 30, headsmen beside the block. The silent people stood in 1649 thousands far off. The King was attended by Bishop Juxon. He died a Protestant of the English Church, declaring that the guilt of the Civil War did not rest with him, as the Parliament had been the first to take up arms; but confessing, at the same time, that he was now suffering a just punishment for the death of Strafford. One blow of the axe, and all was over. A deep groan burst from the assembled multitude as the executioner raised the bleeding head and cried, "This is the head of a traitor!"

6. **Character of Charles.**—Charles was a good husband, a kind father, and a faithful friend; but he was a bad King. In politics he was changeful and insincere. He was easily influenced by favourites and by men of stronger will than his. His leading motives were fondness for Episcopacy; thirst for absolute power; and the belief, inherited from his father, that he was King by divine right. These made his reign a failure and ruined his life.

New Words in this Lesson.

Con-sti-tu'tion	ex-e-cu'tion-er	judg'ment	mul'ti-tude
de-ci'sive-ly	ex-treme'	max'im	mur-murs
dig'ni-ty	in-sin-cere'	mod'er-ate	pres'i-dent
en'trance	in-vest-ed	mo'tives	sum'mon-ing

Notes and Meanings.

- | | |
|---|---|
| 2 Decisively, in a decided manner. | 5 Banqueting House, nearly opposite the Horse Guards. It was built in 1619; turned into a chapel by George I. in 1723-24; still called "The Chapel Royal, Whitehall." |
| 3 Peers, noblemen; members of the House of Lords; literally, equals. | 6 Insincere, not true; not genuine. |
| 4 Maxim, rule fixed by usage. | |
| The Constitution, the body of laws regulating the form of government. | |

Questions:—1. What was the result of Hamilton's invasion of England? 2. How did Cromwell get rid of the Presbyterians in Parliament? 3. Who refused to take part in the King's trial? With what was Charles charged? 4. On what ground did he refuse to be tried? What was the sentence? 5. Where was Charles executed? What was his dying declaration? 6. What was his character?

THE COMMONWEALTH.

1649-1660 A.D.

SUMMARY OF THE PERIOD.

1649. The Scots proclaim Charles II. (February 5)—Royalty and the House of Lords abolished—England declared "a Commonwealth and free State"—The government vested in a Council of State of forty-one members—Cromwell subdues Ireland: sack of Drogheda, and massacre of Wexford.
1650. Montrose lands in Orkney; crosses to Caithness; is defeated at Corbiesdale; is captured and hanged at Edinburgh—Charles II. goes to Edinburgh—David Leslie defeated by Cromwell at Dunbar.
1651. Charles crowned at Scone; signs the Covenant—Cromwell defeats him at Worcester—He escapes to France.
1653. Quarrel between Cromwell and the Parliament—Cromwell expels the Long Parliament—"Barebone's Parliament" is called—Oliver Cromwell Lord Protector.
1654. Oliver calls a Parliament—It is soon dissolved—Union of England and Scotland (lasted till the Restoration)—Peace with Holland, favourable to England—The *Triers*, authorized to license preachers, fill the parish pulpits with Independents and Presbyterians.
1655. Capture of Jamaica from Spain.
1657. Oliver's second Parliament (1656) offers him the title of King—He refuses—Victory of Blake at Teneriffe.
1658. Oliver's third Parliament—The Commons refuse to acknowledge the new House of Lords—Parliament is dissolved (February 4)—Capture of Dunkirk—Oliver dies (September 3)—Richard Cromwell Lord Protector.
1659. Richard Cromwell resigns—A year of anarchy follows.
1660. Monk returns to London, and declares for a free Parliament—The Long Parliament reassembles, appoints the election of a new Parliament, and dissolves itself—The new Parliament (or Convention) invites Charles to return—He is proclaimed at the gate of Westminster Hall (May 8).

15. CROMWELL'S TROUBLES.

1. **The Council of State.**—England, now a Commonwealth, continued so for more than eleven years. A fragment of the Long Parliament still sat. The office of King was declared unnecessary, and the House of Lords was voted useless and

dangerous. The government was vested in a Council of State of forty-one members. Of this Council, Bradshaw was President; John Milton was Foreign Secretary; Cromwell and Fairfax directed the Army; Sir Harry Vane controlled the Navy. But Cromwell and his soldiers really ruled the nation. The Duke of Hamilton and two other Royalist nobles were tried and executed.

2. **Rising of the Levellers.**—Three great difficulties then met Cromwell—a mutiny among his soldiers, a Royalist rising in Ireland, and another in Scotland. Some of the soldiers, who had combined under the name of Levellers, and who

wished all distinctions of rank to be abolished, rose in arms in Oxfordshire; but they were speedily scattered by Cromwell and Fairfax.

3. **Rising in Ireland.**—The subjugation of Ireland was a more difficult task. Since the insurrection of 1641, all had been confusion there. The Marquis of Ormond, leader of the Irish Royalists, who held nearly all the fortresses in the island, proclaimed Charles the Second. Dublin, Derry, and Belfast were the only strongholds of the Parliament. Cromwell, having received his commission as Lord-Lieutenant, landed near Dublin with ten thousand men. It was a small force, but it consisted of bold and determined soldiers.

4. In six months Oliver completely broke the power of the Royalist party in Ireland. The sack of Drogheda was the chief operation of the war. Garrisons were put to



MILTON.

the sword; whole cities were left desolate. Wexford was deluged with the blood of massacre. The surrender of Clonmel completed Cromwell's triumph. Everywhere the Roman Catholics fled before their terrible foe. When Cromwell left for London, Ireton and Ludlow remained to guard the conquered island. On his arrival in London, Oliver received public thanks for his great services, and was created Lord-General of the Armies of the Commonwealth.

5. Rising in Scotland.—In Scotland, also, the Royalists showed a bold front. The news of the stern work of judgment done at Whitehall on the 30th January reached Edinburgh five days afterwards, on a Sunday. Indignation and pity filled every breast. The next day, the eldest son of the deceased monarch was proclaimed King. The Lord Chancellor, the eloquent Loudon, dressed in a robe of black velvet, read the proclamation at the Cross of Edinburgh. Charles the Second, the prince thus proclaimed, was then at the Hague in Holland—a tall, swarthy lad, eighteen years of age.

6. Loyal to their King, and faithful to their sworn covenant, which bound them to maintain his lawful authority, the Scots called the young Charles to the throne. But, while they bound themselves to stand by him to the death, they required him to rule according to the laws, and to respect their liberty of conscience. In pledge of his good faith, they asked him to take the Covenant.

7. Death of Montrose.—Commissioners were sent over to Holland to negotiate with the King on this footing. The negotiations consumed a great deal of time; and meanwhile the Marquis of Montrose attempted an independent rising in the north of Scotland. When he was captured, a commission from Charles, giving him authority to raise troops and subdue the kingdom by force of arms, was found in his possession! That at once explained how the negotiations in Holland had consumed so much time. Charles had been temporizing, in the hope that the success of Montrose would relieve him from the necessity of accepting the terms of the Covenanters. Montrose was executed at Edinburgh without a trial, under a sentence passed on him five years previously.

8. Charles in Scotland.—Charles then flung himself into

the arms of the Covenanters. He agreed to sign the Covenant, and he landed at the mouth of the Spey in June 1650. The people of Scotland were overjoyed on his arrival among them. In Edinburgh they hailed it with bonfires, ringing of bells, and sounding of trumpets, and danced all night in the streets. Care was taken, however, to surround Charles only with trustworthy Covenanters, all Malignants and suspected persons being kept at a distance from him.

New Words in this Lesson.

a-bol'ished	des'o-late	Lev'el-ers	o-ver-joyed'
com-bined'	dis-tinc'tions	mas-sa-cre	sub-ju-ga'tion
con-sumed'	el'o-quent	ne-ces-si-ty	swar'thy
de-ceased'	in-dig-na'tion	ne-go'ti-ate	tem'por-lz-ing
del'uged	in-sur-rec'tion	op-er-a'tion	un-nec'es-sar-y

Notes and Meanings.

3 Subjugation, conquest.

Insurrection, rising; rebellion.

Ormond. James Butler, tenth Earl of Ormond, was made a marquis in 1642. He retired to the Continent during the Commonwealth. He was made a duke after the Restoration, and became Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland. He died in 1688.

Derry, old name of Londonderry.

4 Drogheda, on the river Boyne, north of Dublin.

Desolate, without inhabitants.

Wexford, on the river Slaney, southwest of Dublin.

Clonmel, on the river Suir, northeast of Cork.

Ireton, Henry Ireton, son-in-law of Cromwell; died at Limerick, 1651.

Ludlow, Edmund Ludlow, a lawyer; died in Switzerland, 1693.

7 Temporizing, yielding to the demands of the time; trimming.

8 The Spey, in the north of Scotland; the boundary, at its mouth, between the counties of Elgin and Banff.

Questions:—1. How long did the Commonwealth last? In what body was the government vested? 2. What were Cromwell's three difficulties? 3. Who proclaimed Charles in Ireland? 4. What successes had Cromwell in Ireland? 5. What did the Scots do, on hearing of the death of Charles I.? 6. What did they ask the young King to do, in pledge of his good faith? 7. Why were the negotiations delayed? How was that discovered? What was Montrose's fate? 8. When did Charles go to Scotland?

16. THE EXECUTION OF MONTROSE.

[James Graham, Marquis of Montrose, was at one time a Covenanter; but in the course of the struggle between King and Parliament, he became a Royalist. Montrose in 1645 gathered a host of Highlanders and Irishmen, with which he overran Scotland. At Philiphaugh, however, General David Leslie defeated

him and drove him to the Highlands for refuge. Having attempted a second rising in 1650, he was captured, and was executed at Edinburgh. The story of his execution is supposed to be told here by one of his old soldiers to young Evan Cameron of Lochiel, who afterwards served under Claverhouse.]

1. Come hither, Evan Cameron! come, stand beside my knee—
I hear the river roaring down towards the wintry sea.
There's shouting on the mountain side, there's war within the blast—
Old faces look upon me, old forms go trooping past;
I hear the pibroch wailing amidst the din of fight,
And my dim spirit wakes again upon the verge of night!
2. 'Twas I that led the Highland Host through wild Lochaber's
snows,
What time the plaided clans came down to battle with Montrose.
I've told thee how the Southrons fell beneath the broad clay-
more,
And how we smote the Campbell clan by Inverlochy's shore;
I've told thee how we swept Dundee, and tamed the Lindsay's
pride;—
But never have I told thee yet how the Great Marquis died!
3. A traitor sold him to his foes;—oh, deed of deathless shame!
I charge thee, boy, if e'er thou meet with one of Assynt's name—
Be it upon the mountain's side, or yet within the glen,
Stand he in martial gear alone, or backed by armed men—
Face him, as thou wouldst face the man who wronged thy sire's
renown;
Remember of what blood thou art, and strike the caitiff down!
4. They brought him to the Watergate, hard bound with hempen
span,
As though they held a lion there, and not a 'fenceless man.
They set him high upon a cart—the hangman rode below;
They drew his hands behind his back, and bared his noble
brow.
Then, as a hound is slipped from leash, they cheered the com-
mon throng,
And blew the note with yell and shout, and bade him pass
along.

5. But when he came, though pale and wan, he looked so great
and high,
So noble was his manly front, so calm his steadfast eye;—
The rabble rout forbore to shout, and each man held his breath,
For well they knew the hero's soul was face to face with death.
And then a mournful shudder through all the people crept;
And some that came to scoff at him now turned aside and wept.
* * * * *
6. They placed him next within the solemn hall,
Where once the Scottish kings were throned amidst their
nobles all.
But there was dust of vulgar feet on that polluted floor,
And perjured traitors filled the place where good men sate
before.
With savage glee came Warristoun to read the murderous doom;
And then uprose the great Montrose in the middle of the room.
7. "Now, by my faith as belted knight, and by the name I bear,
And by the bright Saint Andrew's Cross that waves above us
there—
Yea, by a greater, mightier oath—and oh, that such should be!—
By that dark stream of royal blood that lies 'twixt you and me—
I have not sought in battle-field a wreath of such renown,
Nor dared I hope, on my dying day, to win the martyr's crown!
8. "There is a chamber far away, where sleep the good and brave,
But a better place ye have named for me than by my father's
grave.
For truth and right, 'gainst treason's might, this hand hath
always striven,
And ye raise it up for a witness still in the eye of earth and
heaven.
Then nail my head on yonder tower—give every town a limb—
And God who made shall gather them—I go from you to Him!"
9. The morning dawned full darkly, the rain came flashing down,
And the jagged streak of the levin-bolt lit up the gloomy town:
The thunder crashed across the heaven, the fatal hour was come;
Yet aye broke in, with muffled beat, the 'larum of the drum.
There was madness on the earth below, and anger in the sky;
And young and old, and rich and poor, came forth to see him
die.

10. He mounted up the scaffold, and he turned him to the crowd,
But they dared not trust the people, so he might not speak
aloud.

But he looked upon the heavens, and they were clear and blue,
And in the liquid ether the eye of God shone through;
Yet a black and murky battlement lay resting on the hill,
As though the thunder slept within—all else was calm and
still.

11. A beam of light fell o'er him, like a glory round the shriven,
And he climbed the lofty ladder as it were the path to heaven.
Then came a flash from out the cloud, and a stunning thunder-
roll;
And no man dared to look aloft, for fear was on every soul.
There was another heavy sound—a hush, and then a groan;
And darkness swept across the sky—the work of death was
done!

W. E. ARTOUX.

New Words in this Lesson.

cal'tiff	lev'in-bolt	muf'led	plaid'ed
e'ther	li'quid	mur'der-ous	pol-lit'ed
hemp'en	mar'tyr	per'jured	wail'ing

Notes and Meanings.

- 1 Pibroch, music of the bagpipe.
2 Lochaber, the south-west of Inverness-shire. Montrose retired there in 1645, when pursued by the forces of Argyle.
Claymore, broad-sword.
Inverlochy's shore, the shore of Loch Lochy, in Inverness-shire, one of the chain of lakes forming the Caledonian Canal. There Montrose defeated the clan Campbell, February 2, 1645.
3 Assynt's name. Montrose was delivered up to the Estates of Scotland by Macleod of Assynt, in the south-west of Sutherland.
Martial gear, military dress.
Caitiff, villain.
4 Hempen span, rope made of hemp.
Fenceless, defenceless.
6 The solemn hall, in Holyrood House.
Polluted, dishonoured.
Perjured, having sworn falsely.
Murderous doom, death-warrant.
7 Saint Andrew's Cross, the national emblem of Scotland.
Stream of royal blood, the blood of Charles I.
8 Gather them. At the Restoration, the scattered limbs of Montrose were gathered, and were interred with much ceremony in St. Giles's Cathedral.
9 Levin-bolt, lightning-flash.
10 Liquid ether, clear air.
Murky battlement, a wall of dark cloud.
11 The lofty ladder. Montrose was hanged on a gibbet thirty feet high, at the Cross of Edinburgh. The "ladder" to reach it must needs have been "lofty."

17. DUNBAR DROVE.

1. The English Invasion.—An English army was already marching toward the Border. To the English Council of State it seemed better to invade than to be invaded; a thing far from unlikely with Charles on the throne of Scotland, and with a powerful Royalist party in England burning with hatred against the new government. So General Cromwell, at the head of sixteen thousand foot and horse, July, 1650 passed through Berwick, and encamped on Scottish ground.

2. The same night the beacons were all fired, and flashed the tidings of invasion from hill-top to hill-top between Berwick and Edinburgh. The population fled, driving away their cattle. All over Berwickshire and East Lothian, the English found the country stripped of everything that could be of use to an invading army, and no human being could be seen except a few old women clad in white flannel. Not till they came close to Edinburgh did the English get sight of an enemy.

3. Position of the Scots.—The Scottish army lay within intrenched lines, stretching from Leith shore to the Calton Hill, with Edinburgh behind them—a strong position, which it was hopeless to try to force. General David Leslie commanded them. The Scots lay comfortably within their lines, well victualled from Edinburgh and the west. The English had little shelter, the rain was excessive, and their supplies were already running short. Oliver spent the month of August in trying, by all kinds of snares, to bring Leslie to battle; but Leslie could not by any means be tempted to quit his strong position.

4. The English retire to Dunbar.—Sickness began to set in among Oliver's men; the weather grew wilder, and food scarcer every day. It was clear that they could not stay there. Dunbar was behind them, with a harbour where their ships could lie, and bring them provisions; or, if the worst came, whence they could be taken home. Oliver, therefore, on Saturday, the last day of August, fired his huts and marched for Dunbar. Leslie then left his lines, followed close on Oliver's rear, and took up his position on the hills that overlook the town, shutting in Oliver on the nook of coast on which the

town stands. Leslie's force numbered three-and-twenty thousand; Oliver's about half as many, and disease was in his camp, the men "falling sick beyond imagination."

5. **Movement of the Scots.**—All Sunday and Monday the two armies lay thus at Dunbar. On Monday afternoon Cromwell observed that Leslie was moving his forces down from the hills and coming nearer. This movement is said to have been made by the advice of the clergy in the Scottish camp, and sorely against the will of Leslie. Cromwell, however, interpreted it to mean that the Scots intended to attack him the next morning before daybreak. Oliver will not wait to receive battle from the Scots; he will give them battle before daybreak himself.

6. **The English Onset.**—The two armies lay that Monday evening with the Brocksburn, and the little glen through which it runs, between them. It was close on the dawn, but all was yet still in the Scottish host, when Oliver's war-trumpets broke the silence of the night, and instantly his cannon and musketry boomed and flashed along the line. The English, foot and horse, dashed across the burn against the right wing of the Scots, where their cavalry were posted. Broken by the shock, the Scots' cavalry were driven headlong among their own foot, scattering and trampling them down, and all was panic and wild confusion.

7. The English, who "had the chase and execution of them near eight miles," lost not over twenty men of their own, and slew three thousand Scots. Ten thousand prisoners were taken, two hundred colours, thirty pieces of cannon, fifteen thousand stand of arms. Such was Dunbar Drove: lamentable wreck and carnage inflicted on the Scots by their brothers! Cromwell marched to Edinburgh, which yielded without delay, though the Castle held out till Christmas eve.

8. **The Battle of Worcester.**—Undismayed, the Scots crowned Charles at Scone on New-Year's Day (1651), when he signed the Covenant, and thus agreed to maintain unbroken the Presbyterianism of Scotland. Leslie and his Covenanters were at Stirling, still formidable. Cromwell besieged and captured Perth, which had been made the seat of Charles's government. Suddenly, with Charles at their head, the Scots marched into England. They had reached Worcester, when

Cromwell overtook them. It was the anniversary of Dunbar Drove. A battle followed, which Cromwell was accustomed to call his "crowning mercy." The army of Charles was scattered. Sept. 3, 1651

9. **Escape of Charles.**—Among the midland counties he wandered in disguise for more than a month; at one time the guest of humble foresters, at another hid for a whole day among the branches of an oak tree, while he watched through the leafy screen the red-coats of Oliver searching for him. Through many dangers he at last reached Shoreham in Sussex, whence he was carried safely in a coal-boat to Fécamp in France.

New Words in this Lesson.

an-ni-ver'sar-y	for-est-ers	in-trenched'	pop-u-la-tion
car-nage	i-mag-i-na-tion	lam'-ent-a-ble	tramp'-ling
ex-ces'sive	in-ter'-pret-ed	ob-served'	un-dis-mayed'

Notes and Meanings.

- | | |
|---|---|
| <p>3 Intrenched, fortified with a trench or ditch and a parapet.
Victualled, supplied with food.</p> <p>4 Dunbar, on the coast of East Lothian, about 30 miles east of Edinburgh. Beyond imagination, beyond what could be imagined or believed.</p> <p>5 Interpreted, understood.</p> <p>6 Brocksburn, a stream 2 miles south-east of Dunbar.</p> <p>7 Carnage, slaughter.</p> | <p>8 Scone (pronounced Scone), near Perth; the site of an ancient abbey and royal palace. There the Kings of Scotland used to be crowned. Dunbar Drove. The battle was so called because the Scots fled like a drove or flock of sheep.</p> <p>Undismayed, not frightened.</p> <p>9 Shoreham, west of Brighton. Fécamp, on the English Channel, north-east of Havre.</p> |
|---|---|

Questions:—1. Who invaded Scotland? With how large an army? 2. What plan did the Scots adopt? 3. Where was the Scottish army posted? Who commanded them? 4. To what place did the English retire? What did Leslie do? 5. What did Cromwell notice on Monday afternoon? 6. When did he attack the Scots? What was the result? 7. How many did the Scots lose? Where did Cromwell go? 8. Where was Charles crowned? Where was he finally defeated? 9. From what place did he escape to France?

18. SCOTLAND UNDER CROMWELL.

1. **General Monk in Scotland.**—After the Battle of Worcester, General Monk, intrusted by Cromwell with the command in Scotland, had little difficulty in reducing the country.

Monk took Stirling Castle, where he found a number of public records, which he seized and sent to London. The Estates of the Realm, which had taken refuge in the quiet little town of Alyth, were surprised and captured, and the members were at once shipped off to London, that they might give no more trouble. The town of Dundee made what resistance it could, and forced Monk to take it by storm; for which he made the place so terrible an example of fire and blood that other towns in the north speedily opened their gates. A formal agreement or treaty was made with the Marquis of Argyle, who had fortified himself in his Highland strongholds, and whom it would have been troublesome to reduce by force.

2. **Settlement of the Country.**—The fighting was over. The work of remodelling the government had to begin. In January 1652, commissioners of the English Parliament met in Edinburgh to order the affairs of Scotland. Cromwell and Sir Harry Vane, as well as Monk and Lambert, were there. Scotland was treated fairly, yet exactly as a conquered country which had become a part of the English Commonwealth. The estates of Royalists were forfeited. Taxes were levied. The people were disarmed, and forts guarded by earth-works were erected to keep them in subjection. A Commission of Justice was set up, consisting partly of English and partly of Scottish judges.

3. **The Church Courts silenced.**—The next step that had to be taken was the silencing of the Church courts, the quarrelling in which was a chief cause of the popular tumult. Moreover, the clergy of the Presbyterian Church were suspected of having very distinct Royalist leanings. In July 1653, the General Assembly met as usual in Edinburgh. The church in which it met was surrounded with troops, and the officer in command entered and ordered the members to disperse quietly, to save him the trouble of dragging them out. Surrounded by musketeers and horsemen, they were marched a mile out of Edinburgh in a body, and were then ordered to quit the city within twenty-four hours.

4. **Glencairn's Rebellion.**—The quietness secured by Monk's vigorous rule in Scotland was broken by a new rising of the

Highlanders in the west under the Earl of Glencairn, who held a commission from the exiled Charles. Glencairn was joined in August 1653 by several heads of clans, and had soon ^{Aug.} five thousand men under his command. Though a zealous 1653 Royalist, he was an incompetent commander, and in February following he was superseded by Colonel Middleton. The English army in Scotland was increased to eighteen thousand men, and a body of three thousand was detached, under Monk and General Morgan, to deal with the western rebels.

5. Suddenly, one day in August, Morgan's outposts and Middleton's found themselves in collision in the heart of Glegarry. The ground did not admit of a pitched battle; but there was some sharp fighting, the result of which was that the Royalists were dispersed, and Middleton disheartened returned to France. Thereafter the Highlanders were effectually curbed, and remained so while the Commonwealth lasted.

6. **Union with England.**—After Cromwell's elevation to the dignity of Lord Protector of the Commonwealth of England, the proposals for a more complete union between England and Scotland were renewed, and in April following an ^{April,} ordinance of the Lord Protector was issued declaring the 1654 two countries to be united. Scotland was to be represented by thirty members in the English Parliament. Freedom of trade was established between England and Scotland. The feudal customs remaining in Scotland were abolished, and fixed rents for land took their place. A few months later, the Presbyterian Church courts were done away with. The country was ^{July 20.} divided into five ecclesiastical districts, in each of which the management of the Church and the settlement of ministers were committed to a small number of overseers, partly clergy-men and partly laymen.

7. **Peace and Prosperity.**—Under Cromwell's firm rule, Scotland was peaceful and prosperous. "A man might ride over all Scotland with a switch in his hand and an hundred pounds in his pocket, which he could not have done these five hundred years." But the blessings of peace and prosperity were gained at considerable sacrifices. The country lost its character of a separate nationality. The Parliament, or Estates of the Realm, was extinguished. English judges sat in the

The Scottish Church was transformed. Never-
of conscience was fully respected. Commerce
and property was secure.

New Words in this Lesson.

col-lis-ion	ec-cle-si-as-ti-cal	in-trust-ed	re-sist-ance
con-sid-er-a-ble	ef-fec-tu-al-ly	mus-ket-eers'	sac-ri-fi-c-es
de-tach-ed'	el-e-vat-ion	o-ver-se-ers	sub-jec-tion
dis-heart-ened	ex-tin-guished	re-mod-el-ling	su-per-sed-ed
dis-perse'	in-com-pe-tent	rep-re-sent-ed	trans-formed'

Notes and Meanings.

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1 Alyth, in the east of Perthshire, near the boundary of Forfarshire. | Incompetent, unfit. |
| 3 Musketeers, soldiers armed with muskets. | Superseded, displaced. |
| 4 Earl of Glencairn, William Cunningham. | 5 Collision, conflict. |
| | Glengarry, in Inverness-shire. |
| | 7 Extinguished, put out of being; abolished. |

Questions:—1. How was the Scottish Parliament got rid of? What place did Monk take by storm? 2. How did the English Commissioners treat Scotland? 3. How was the General Assembly silenced? 4. Who headed a new rising in the Highlands? 5. Where did the two armies come into collision? 6. What were the terms of the union with England then effected? 7. In what state was Scotland under Cromwell?

19. THE PROTECTORATE.

1. **The Dutch War.**—A Navigation Act, passed in 1651, forbidding any but English ships from trading with England, led to a Dutch War. It lasted three years, and many severe sea-fights took place in the course of it. Martin Tromp, De Witt, and De Ruyter were the Dutch admirals; the English admirals were Blake, Monk, and Penn. Near the Goodwins (November 1652) Tromp defeated Blake, who was wounded; but off Portland (February 1653) Blake vanquished Tromp in a furious battle which lasted three days. The decisive battle was fought off the island of Texel (July 31, 1653), where Tromp was killed. Peace was concluded in 1654.

2. **Difference with the Parliament.**—In the course of the Dutch War, a quarrel arose between Cromwell and the Parliament. After their defeat in 1653, the Dutch sought peace; but the Parliament refused to close the war, for it was only by keeping up the victorious navy that they could hope to hold

Cromwell and the army in check. Oliver then resolved on a decided step. He urged his officer to present a petition for pay still due to them. The Parliament declared that such petitions should be considered treasonable, and began to prepare a Bill to that effect. Cromwell marched to the House with three hundred musketeers, and, leaving them outside, entered and took his seat.

3. **Expulsion of the Long Parliament.**—By-and-by he rose to speak. He charged the Parliament with oppression and profanity; and, when some members rose to reply, he trode up and down with his hat on, hurling reproaches at them. "Get you gone," cried he, "and give way to honest men!" He stamped on the floor; the musketeers poured in. "Take away that bauble!" said he, pointing to the mace which lay on the table. Resistance was useless. The Hall was speedily cleared; and Oliver, as he left, locked the door and carried off the key. This was the expulsion of the Long Parliament.

4. **Cromwell, Protector.**—An Assembly of about one hundred and forty members, selected from the warmest supporters of Oliver, then met instead of a Parliament. Its enemies called it Barebone's Parliament, after Barbon, a leather-eller, who took the chief part in its proceedings. This Assembly drew up the Instrument of Government, making Cromwell Lord Protector of the Commonwealth; but it was soon afterwards dissolved.

5. **Home Policy.**—Cromwell was now practically sovereign of England. He was declared head of the army and the navy, and a Parliament was formally called in his name. His intention seems to have been to rule the country in the old constitutional way; but his first House of Commons quarrelled with him on the subject of supplies, and he dissolved it in anger before a single Act was passed. In Church affairs, he adopted a decided policy. Freedom of religion was proclaimed. Local committees were authorized to eject unfit ministers; and a Commission of Triers was appointed to examine candidates presented to livings. The Triers filled the parish pulpits with Independent and Presbyterian ministers.

6. **Foreign Policy.**—Cromwell's foreign policy made his name

famous. The glory of England, which had grown dim during the two preceding reigns, now shone brighter than ever. The naval war with Holland, already referred to, made England the mistress of the seas. The Barbary pirates, long the pest of the Mediterranean, vanished before the English cruisers. Spain yielded up in 1655 the rich island of Jamaica. Under the shadow of Oliver's favour, the Protestants of southern France and of the Alps lived in peace and safety. Dunkirk, a fortified sea-port in Flanders, was taken from the French. Admiral Blake, by victories at Teneriffe (1657) and elsewhere, broke the power of Spain, and made the name of England famous on the seas.

7. Cromwell's Second Parliament.—In the flush of these successes, Cromwell ventured to call a second House of Commons (1656). In the following year, this House offered him the title of King; but he contented himself with naming his son as his successor in the Protectorate. In connection with his third Parliament, he attempted to form a new House of Lords; but the ancient Peers of England refused to take their places in it. When he required the Commons to acknowledge his newly-created Peers, he was met with a distinct refusal. Thereupon he dissolved his third Parliament, and during his remaining days he ruled alone.

8. Death of Cromwell.—These last days were dark and cloudy. One plot arose after another to mar his peace. A book called "*Killing no Murder*," in which the author boldly advised his removal, filled him with ceaseless fears. He carried pistols, and wore a shirt of mail under his clothes. His strength began to fail; and he died of ague on the 3rd of September 1658,—the anniversary of Dunbar and of Worcester.

9. His Character.—Great decision and energy marked the character of Oliver Cromwell. The secret of his success lay in his splendid military talents, which were stirred to life by the troubles of the Civil War. He was less successful in ruling the English nation than in drilling his great army. He disliked all show and ceremony. His look was harsh and forbidding; his manner, to the last, blunt and clownish; but within the rugged frame there burned a great and earnest soul.

New Words in this Lesson.

ac-knowl-edge	cruis-ers	par-ish	Pro-tec-tor-ate
ad-mir-als	e-ject	pi-rates	re-ferred
baul-ble	In-stru-ment	prac-ti-cal-ly	re-proach-es
can-di-dates	mis-tress	pre-ced-ing	treason-a-ble
con-sti-tu-tion-al	Nav-i-ga-tion	pro-fan-i-ty	van-ish-ed

Notes and Meanings.

1 Navigation Act, a law relating to the use of ships in the foreign trade of the country.

Martin Tromp, a famous Dutch admiral; born 1597; killed 1653. Cornelius van Tromp, also a celebrated admiral, was his son. In 1675 the latter visited England, and was made a Baron by Charles II. Born 1629; died 1691.

De Witt, Cornelius, a famous Dutch admiral and statesman. His younger brother, John De Witt, was one of the noblest of Dutch patriots. Both opposed the House of Orange, and fell victims to the fury of the mob in the streets of the Hague, in 1672.

De Ruyter, pronounced *De Roi'ter*. Michael Adrian Ruyter, a celebrated Dutch admiral; born 1607; killed 1676, in an engagement with the French off Sicily.

Blake, Robert, was born at Bridgewater in 1598. He was a member of the Long Parliament, and a captain of a troop of cavalry in the Civil War. His naval career began in 1649. He died in 1657, and was buried in Westminster Abbey; but his body was removed at the Restoration. He was remarkable for skill and daring.

Monk, George, born in Devonshire in 1608. In the Civil War he at first took the side of the King, and was imprisoned by the Parliament till 1646. He then got a command in Ireland, and under the Commonwealth Cromwell gave him the chief command in Scotland; but he afterwards suspected his loyalty.

He was chiefly instrumental in effecting the Restoration. Charles II. rewarded him by making him Duke of Albemarle. He became Admiral of the Fleet in 1664, and died in 1670.

Penn, Sir William, born at Bristol in 1621. He commanded the fleet at the taking of Jamaica in 1655; died 1670. His son William was the founder of Pennsylvania.

Portland, a peninsula in the south of Dorsetshire.

Texel, an island at the entrance of the Zuyder Zee.

3 Profanity, want of reverence; impiety.

4 Barebone's Parliament, so called from Praise-God Barbon, a leather merchant, one of the members for London.

6 Barbary, the north of Africa, between Egypt and the Atlantic. Admiral Blake alarmed the pirates into submission in 1655; but piracy was resumed. In 1616 Algiers was bombarded by a British fleet. In 1830 it was taken by the French; and Algeria was formally annexed to France in 1842.

Jamaica, the chief of the British West India Islands. It was discovered by Columbus in 1494, and was taken from the Spaniards by Admirals Penn and Venables in 1655.

Dunkirk, on the French coast, north-east of Calais.

Teneriffe, the largest of the Canary Islands, in the Atlantic, 60 miles from the west coast of North Africa.

Questions:—1. What led to a Dutch war in 1651? Where was the decisive action fought? 2. About what did Cromwell quarrel with the Parliament?

20. IN PRAISE OF OLIVER CROMWELL.

(PRO THE "HEROIC STANZAS.")

1. His grandeur he derived from Heaven alone,

For he was great ere fortune made him so;

And wars, like mists that rise against the sun,

Made him but greater seem, not greater grow.

No borrowed bays his temples did adorn,

But to our crown he did fresh jewels bring;

Nor was his virtue poisoned, soon as born,

With the too early thoughts of being king.

He, private, marked the faults of others' sway,

And set as sea-marks for himself to shun;

Not like rash monarchs, who their youth betray

By acts their age, too late, would wish undone.

2. And yet dominion was not his design;

We owe that blessing not to him but Heaven,

Which to fair acts unsought rewards did join—

Rewards that less to him than us were given.

Wife and resistless through the land he passed,

Like that bold Greek who did the East subdue,

And made to battles such heroic haste,

As if on wings of victory he flew.

Nor was he like those stars which only shine

When to pale mariners they storms portend;

He had his calmer influence, and his mien

Did love and majesty together blend.

3. Fame of the asserted sea, through Europe blown,

Made France and Spain ambitious of his love;

Each knew that side must conquer he would own,

And for him fiercely as for empire strove.

3. How did he make him self supreme? 4. What as emily then met? To what office was Cromwell appointed? 5. What difference had he with his first Parliament? How did he treat the church? 6. How did he raise the glory of England abroad? 7. How did his third Parliament break up? 8. When did he die? 9. What was his character?

For died he when his ebbing fame went less
But when fresh laurels courted him to live;
He seemed but to prevent some new success,
As if above what triumph Earth could give.

4. His latest victories still thickest came,
As near the centre motion does increase;
Till he, pressed down by his own weighty name,
Did, like the Vestal, under spoils decase.

His ashes in a peaceful urn shall rest;
His name, a great example, stands to show
How strangely high endeavours may be blest,
Where piety and valour jointly go.

DIRECT.

New Words in this Lesson

am-bitious	en-deavours	laurels	or-tend'
bor-rowed	gran-deur	mar-ti-nets	re-sist-less
de-ri-ved'	he-ro-ic	pie-ly	stan-zas

Notes and Meanings.

1 Grandeur, greatness; nobility of character.
2 Dominion, power.
3 Fame of the asserted sea, fame of superiority asserted on the sea; that is, naval supremacy.
4 Near the centre motion does increase. Not true in all cases. When a disc or a globe is revolving, the speed is greatest at the circumference. It is true, however, in the case of what is called centripetal—that is, "centre-seeking"—force.
Like the Vestal. This refers to a vestal virgin called Tarpeia, who betrayed the citadel of Rome to the abines, and who was crushed by their shields. The simile is not a happy one.
Decase, die.
Endeavours, efforts.

21. END OF THE PROTECTORATE.

1. Resignation of Richard.—Oliver's son Richard, a timid, modest man, quietly succeeded to the office of Protector. But the soldiers, missing their great chief, grew mutinous. The

Council of Officers forced Richard to dissolve the Parliament which he had called. They recalled the Rump, or remainder of the Long Parliament, expelled in 1653. Richard then **1659** resigned the Protectorship, which he had held for only eight months (May 13, 1659). Retiring to his farms at Cheshunt, near Hertford, he lived the peaceful life of a country gentleman until 1712, when he died in the eighty-sixth year of his age.

2. Anarchy.—The resignation of Protector Richard was followed by a year of anarchy. The Parliament had been restored by the army, but now quarrelled with it. Hazelrig, one of the famous "Five Members," led the former; and Lambert, one of Oliver's major-generals, the latter. The Royalists took advantage of these differences to revive their schemes. Royalist risings took place in various parts of England, but Lambert put them down. In October, Lambert expelled the Parliament. Monk, who was in Scotland, then marched into England, intending to restore the Parliament. He had reached York in December when riots occurred in London, and the Parliament was reinstated.

3. Monk in London.—At York, Monk was joined by Fairfax, who made no secret of his Royalist leanings. In February, Monk entered London at the head of five thousand men. **1660** The people waited with trembling anxiety to know his resolve, and great was their joy when he declared for a free Parliament. The Presbyterian members, who had been expelled by Colonel Pride (1648), returned to their seats in the Long Parliament; and that famous body, after appointing a new Parliament to meet, finally dissolved itself.

4. The Convention.—The new Parliament, or rather Convention, composed chiefly of Cavaliers and Presbyterians, **1660** met on April 25. The Lords also returned to their places in the Upper House. It was clearly seen that the hearts of both Parliament and people were leaning towards their exiled Sovereign; and when Monk announced in Parliament, on May 1, that a messenger from Charles was waiting for admission, the news was received with joyful shouts.

5. Recall of Charles.—The King's messenger, Sir John Grenville, brought with him letters from Charles to both

Houses of Parliament, accompanied by the Declaration from Breda. In that document, Charles offered, in the event of his being recalled, a general amnesty, with no exceptions but those which Parliament might make; liberty of conscience to all; settlement by Parliament of questions affecting grants and purchases of land; payment of arrears to Monk's army, and its retention in the King's service. An invitation was at once despatched to Charles in Holland, and a fleet was sent to convey him to England. On May 8, he was proclaimed King at the gate of Westminster Hall.

New Words in this Lesson.

am'nes-ty	Con-ven'tion	in-vi-ta'tion	re-called'
an'ar-chy	Dec-la-ra'tion	ma'jor	re-in-stat'ed
anx-i'e-ty	de-spach'ed'	mod'est	Res-ig-na'tion
com-posed'	ex-pelled'	mu'ti-nous	re-ten'tion

Notes and Meanings.

- | | |
|---|---|
| <p>1 Resignation, giving up office.
Mutinous, disposed to rebel.</p> <p>2 Anarchy, lawlessness.
Major-general, an officer next in rank below a lieutenant-general, who ranks next to a general.</p> <p>3 Reinstated, put back in its place.</p> | <p>4 Convention, assembly; not a Parliament, because not summoned by the Crown.</p> <p>5 Breda, a fortified town in Holland, north-east of Antwerp.
Amnesty, pardon.
Retention, being retained.</p> |
|---|---|

Questions:—1. How long did Richard Cromwell rule? Why did he resign? 2. Of what quarrel did the Royalists take advantage? With what intention did Monk march toward London? 3. When did he enter it? What followed? 4. Of whom was the Convention chiefly composed? 5. On what conditions did Charles offer to return? When was he proclaimed?

CHARLES II.

Born 1630 A.D.—Son of Charles I.—Married Catherine of Portugal—
Reigned 1649 and 1660-1665 A.D.

SUMMARY OF THE REIGN.

- 1660.** Charles enters London—Clarendon Lord Chancellor and Chief Minister—Ten of the Regicides suffer death—Parliament grants the King £1,200,000 a year for life—The Earl of Middleton Commissioner in Scotland.
- 1661.** Alarm of the Presbyterians: the Covenant publicly burned—The "Pensionary Parliament" meets—The Corporation Act passed—Execution of the Marquis of Argyle—Episcopacy is restored in Scotland.

1662. *Act of Uniformity* passed—More than 1,000 ministers quit their livings—The King sells Dunkirk to the French—In Scotland, 400 Presbyterian ministers are driven from their livings: conventicles are held.
1664. The *Conventicle Act* is passed.
1665. The *Five-Mile Act* (completing the "Clarendon Code") is passed—War with Holland—Victory of the Duke of York off Lowestoft—The Great Plague of London: more than 100,000 perish.
1666. Indecisive actions with the Dutch (June 1-4)—Defeat of the Dutch off the North Foreland (July 25)—The Great Fire of London—Dalziel defeats the Scottish Presbyterians at Rullion Green.
1667. A Dutch fleet sails up the Thames and does much damage—Lord Clarendon, charged with treason, flees to France—The Cabal Ministry is formed: Clifford, Arlington, Buckingham, Ashley, and Lauderdale—Lauderdale Secretary of State in Scotland.
1668. Triple Alliance (England, Sweden, and Holland) against France.
1670. The secret *Treaty of Dover* is signed, between Charles and Louis: Charles to receive £200,000 a year.
1672. Renewal of the Dutch War—Defeat of the Dutch at Southwold Bay—The King seizes the funds in the Exchequer.
1673. The *Test Act* is passed, excluding Roman Catholics from office: the Duke of York quits the fleet.
1674. The Cabal Ministry is driven from office—Lord Latimer becomes Chief Minister—Shaftesbury leads the Opposition—Peace with Holland.
1677. Shaftesbury and three other lords are imprisoned for holding that the long prorogation of Parliament (15 months) amounts to a dissolution.
1678. The "Popish Plot" devised by Titus Oates, who receives a pension.
1679. Fall of Danby, who is sent to the Tower—Essex, Sunderland, and Temple succeed—Parliament passes the *Habeas Corpus Act*, providing against imprisonment without trial—Murder of Archbishop Sharp on Magus Moor—Battle of Drumclog: Claverhouse defeated—Battle of Bothwell Bridge: Monmouth defeats the Covenanters—The Duke of York Lord High Commissioner in Scotland (till 1682)—Charles's fourth Parliament meets, but is repeatedly prorogued.
1680. Contest of *Addressers and Abhorrrers*—Parliament meets in October—The *Exclusion Bill* passed by the Commons; thrown out by the Lords.
1681. Charles declares against the Exclusion Bill—The Commons refuse supplies—Parliament is dissolved—Parliament meets at Oxford—The Exclusion Bill again introduced—Dissolution within a week.
1683. Plot to secure the succession to Monmouth—The Rye House Plot, to kill the King—Lord Russell and Algernon Sidney executed for alleged connection with the latter—Monmouth flees to Holland.
1685. Death of Charles.

22. THE RESTORATION.

1. **Reception of Charles.**—On May 25 Charles landed at Dover; and he made his public entry into London on May 29, his birth-day, in the midst of great rejoicings. No tumult marred the joy of the Restoration, as the great event was called. Edward Hyde, afterwards Earl of Clarendon, returned with the King from exile. He was made Lord

Chancellor, and soon became closely connected with the royal family by the marriage of his daughter, Anne Hyde, to the King's brother James, Duke of York, afterwards King James the Second.

2. **The royal Revenue.**—The Convention Parliament continued to sit till the end of the year. It granted the King for life tunnage and poundage, and afterwards a tax on beer and other liquors, which together were equal to a revenue of £1,200,000 a year. One of the uses



CHARLES II.

to which Charles put this money was the support of a few regiments, called the Gentlemen of the Guard. This was the beginning of the standing army, ever since maintained. At the same time Oliver's army was disbanded, a poll-tax having been levied in order to pay them off. While a fixed revenue was settled on the King, feudal tenures, purveyance, and wardship were abolished; and with them disappeared the last remains of the feudal system in England.

3. **The Regicides.**—Twenty-nine of the men who had been concerned in the execution of Charles the First were tried, and ten of these suffered death. The estates and goods of all of them were forfeited to the Crown. Vane, Lambert, and Hazelrig were committed to the Tower. In the following year the bodies of Cromwell, Ireton his son-in-law, and Bradshaw, were taken from their graves and hanged. Monk was rewarded with the title of Duke of Albemarle.

4. **Episcopacy restored.**—It soon became evident that Charles and Clarendon were bent on allowing no form of religion but **Episcopacy**. The King had himself signed the 1661 **Covenant**; yet the **Parliament**, with the King's approval, ordered it to be burned in London by the common hangman. The bishops were recalled to their sees; and the Nonconformists with whom Cromwell's Triers had filled the pulpits of England, were made to give place to the survivors of the clergy formerly expelled.

5. **The Clarendon Code.**—The Pensionary Parliament, which met in May, passed the Corporation Act, which required all magistrates and officers of corporations to take the communion in the Episcopal Church, to renounce the Covenant, and to take the oath of non-resistance. An Act of Uniformity was passed in the following year, requiring that all ministers should be ordained by bishops, and should use the 1662 Book of Common Prayer. More than one thousand ministers, who had obtained livings under Cromwell, were turned out, and forbidden to preach. Many Dissenters were confined in prison. One of these was John Bunyan, who lay twelve years in Bedford jail, and wrote there "The Pilgrim's Progress."

6. Two years later the Conventicle Act was passed, inflicting punishment on persons who attended such meetings. 1664 One year later came the Five-Mile Act; and then the Clarendon Code was complete. The last named Act prohibited nonconforming ministers from going within five miles of a town in which they had preached, and from acting as schoolmasters.

7. **Charles's Extravagance.**—Charles missed no opportunity of filling his purse. With his wife, Catherine of Portugal, he received a dowry of half a million sterling. Dunkirk, acquired by the great Oliver, he sold to the French King for the same sum (1662). He also plunged into a war with Holland, in order to have command of the supplies voted for carrying it on (1665).

8. **War with Holland.**—This Dutch War opened well, but closed shamefully. During the first year a great naval 1665 victory was gained off the Suffolk coast, near Lowestoft, by an English fleet under the Duke of York. In the fol-

lowing year (1666), a series of great sea-fights took place in the Downs (June 1-4), in which the advantage remained with the Dutch; but they were completely defeated off the North Foreland on July 25. In 1667, however, a Dutch fleet, under De Ruyter, destroyed Sheerness, burned the ships lying off Chatham, and sailed up the Thames as far as 1667 to Tilbury Fort. Peace was concluded at Breda about a week later.

9. **The Great Plague.**—In the summer of 1665 London was visited by the Plague. The rich fled in terror to their country-houses. The poor perished in thousands. The 1665 silence of death reigned everywhere, broken only by the rumbling wheels of the dead-cart as it went its rounds. More than one hundred thousand persons perished.

10. **The Great Fire.**—In the following year the Great Fire of London broke out, on Sunday the 2nd of September. The fire is believed to have begun with an accident. 1666 The eastern part of the city, which was full of old wooden houses, continued to burn for a whole week. Eighty-nine churches and more than thirteen thousand houses lay in ashes. This great blaze cleansed the city from the dregs of the plague, still lurking in narrow lanes and filthy rooms.

New Words in this Lesson.

ac-quired'	non-con-form'-ing	Pen'-sion-ar-y	re-nounce'
com-mūn'-ion	non-re-sist'-ance	pro-hib'-it-ed	Res-to-ra'-tion
Con-ven'-ti-cle	op-por-tu'-ni-ty	re-cep'-tion	rev'-e-nue
Cor-po-ra'-tion	or-dained'	Reg'-i-cides	ster'-ling

Notes and Meanings.

- 2 Revenue, income.
 Feudal tenures, manner of holding land under the feudal system.
 Wardship, under the feudal system, the right of an overlord to the care of his vassal's person, and to certain profits of his estate, during minority.
 3 Regicides, persons who kill a king.
 4 Survivors, those still alive.
 5 Pensionary Parliament, so called because many of its members accepted bribes both from Charles and from Louis XIV. of France. It lasted, with several long prorogations, till January 1679.
 Corporation, the governing body of a burgh; a town council.
 Renounce, disown.
 Non-resistance, the unlawfulness of appearing in arms against the King.
 Bunyan, born 1628; died 1688.
 6 Conventicle, a secret meeting for

religious or his; a field meeting
held in secret.
The Clarendon Code, so called after
the Earl of Clarendon.
Nonconforming, dissenting.

Sheerness, a roadstead between
Kent and the Goodwin Sands
Sheerness, a sea-port and naval ar-
senal on the Island of Sheppey in
Kent.

Question.—1. How was Charles received in London? Who returned with him? 2. What revenue was voted him? 3. How were the regicides treated? 4. What soon appeared to be Charles's design? 5. What Acts did the Pensionary Parliament pass? Who was one of the imprisoned Dissenters? 6. What Acts completed the Clarendon Code? 7. What means did Charles adopt for filling the treasury? 8. What were the incidents of the Dutch War? 9. When did the Great Plague occur? 10. What took place the following year?

23. THE REBUILDING OF LONDON.

1. Methinks already from this chymic flame
I see a City of more precious mould;
Rich as the town which gives the Indies name,
With silver paved and all divine with gold.

Already, labouring with a mighty fate,
She shakes the rubbish from her mounting brow,
And seems to have renewed her charter's date,
Which Heaven will to the death of Time allow.
2. More great than human now, and more August,
New deified she from her fires does rise:
Her widening streets on new foundations trust:
And, opening, into larger parts she flies.

Before, she like some shepherdess did show
Who sate to bathe her by a river's side;
Not answering to her fame, but rude and low,
Nor taught the beauteous arts of modern pride.
3. Now, like a maiden queen she will behold
From her high turrets, hourly, suitors come;
The East with incense and the West with gold
Will stand like suppliants to receive her doom.

The silver Thames, her own domestic flood,
Shall bear her vessels like a sweeping train;
And often wind, as of his mistress proud,
With longing eyes to meet her face again.

DRYDEN.

New Word in this Lesson.

Au-gust'	chym'ic	in'cense	shep'herd-ess
beau'teous	de-i-fied	mod'ern	sup-pli-ants

Notes and Meanings.

- 1 Chymic flame, flame that has the power of changing or transforming. The reference is to the Great Fire that destroyed London.
- 2 August. Augusta is the old name of London. Deified, made a goddess.
- 3 Incense, odour of spices. Suppliants, petitioners. Domestic, familiar; homely.

24. THE RESTORATION IN SCOTLAND.

1. Public Rejoicings.—In Scotland, as in England, the King's return was hailed with extravagant joy. Bonfires blazed, and noisy crowds drank the King's health at every market cross. In Edinburgh a long table was spread in the High Street, and the spouts of the Crochan ran day 29, red wine, that all who chose might drink. Bell rang, 1660 drums beat, trumpets sounded, the mob cheered, and all was mad revelry. The Scots had little reason to be thankful for the Restoration, though they hailed it thus joyfully. A Navigation Act, passed by the English Parliament, put an end to the free trade with England which Scotland had enjoyed under the Protectorate, and blighted the fresh young growth of Scottish prosperity.
2. The Scottish Parliament.—On New Year's Day—the first New Year's Day of the restored King—there was a "riding" of the Scottish Parliament. Stately and low, two and two riding abreast, the long line of the procession moved up the Canongate from Holyrood with banners 1661 and trumpet-clang. Footmen in splendid liveries walked at their masters' stirrups; and each nobleman was followed by a gentleman bearing the train of his ample and gorgeous robe. The ancient crown, once on the noble head of Robert the Bruce, and in Cromwell's time hidden away under the pulpit of Kinneff Kirk, was carried before the Lord High Commissioner.
3. The Earl of Middleton.—The person who on the present occasion held that exalted office—which made him a sort of

Vice-king of Scotland—was the Earl of Middleton. Middleton had been a Presbyterian; he had fought on both sides in the civil war; he had succeeded Glencairn in 1654 as the leader of the Scottish Royalists, and he had been a companion of Charles the Second in his exile. He had come back with him at the Restoration; and so, holding on to the royal skirt, he had reached this height, and rode in state as Lord High Commissioner.

4. **The Earl of Lauderdale.**—More powerful than Middleton was the leader of the King's party in the Parliament—John Maitland, Earl of Lauderdale. A grandson of Lord Thirlestane (brother of Maitland of Lethington), who had at one time been Prime Minister of Scotland, he had a hereditary right to leadership. Lauderdale, like Middleton, had been a Presbyterian and an adherent of the Parliament down till the death of Charles the First; but he then attached himself to the Court and person of Charles the Second. Both he and Middleton were taken prisoners at Worcester, and were sent to the Tower, where Lauderdale remained till the Restoration.

5. **The Members.**—There never had met in Scotland a Parliament composed of such wretched materials as this Parliament of Middleton. The Scottish nobility and gentry were almost all miserably poor; and few of them had any hope of mending their fortunes, except through the King's favour. They were therefore ready to do whatever might be the King's pleasure. The elections for the shires and burghs had all been so managed that few members were returned who were not entirely at the King's service.

6. **Reactionary Doings.**—The doings of the Parliament were in harmony with its composition. The Committee of the Lords of the Articles was revived, with greater powers than ever. An "Act Rescissory" was passed abolishing the Acts of "all pretended Parliaments since 1633." The State and the Church were thrown back into the position in which they had been before the days of the Commonwealth and the Covenant. Charles and his ministers were allowed to wield the absolute power that had been denied to his father.

7. **Death of Argyle.**—Charles and Middleton resolved to awe the country into submission, and the Marquis of Argyle was selected as the first victim. Argyle was without doubt

the greatest statesman of his age. He had been the revered counsellor of the Presbyterians in the stormy times of the first Charles. His hands had set the crown on the King's head at Scone; but that did not prevent Charles from sacrificing his life.

8. The Marquis saw it to be his duty to proceed to London, to pay his respects to the King on his restoration. When Charles was told that Argyle had come to wait on him, he ordered him, with an angry stamp of his foot, to be thrown into the Tower. From the Tower he was sent to Scotland to undergo a mock trial before a packed Parliament. He was found guilty of treason, in having complied with the government of Cromwell. They took a vote, "Head, or hang?" and it carried "head;" the execution to be in two days.

9. When in prison, the Marquis said to his friends, "Shortly you will envy me, who am gone before you. My skill fails if you will not either suffer much or sin much." On the way to the scaffold he said, "I could die like a Roman, but I choose rather to die as a Christian." Thus calmly did Archibald, Marquis of Argyle, stoop his head to the loaded axe of the "maiden." May 1661

10. **Death of Guthrie.**—Some of the most earnest of the Presbyterian ministers agreed to complain to the King of the interference with their religion. Twelve of them were thrown into prison; and James Guthrie, the author of the "Remonstrance" against Episcopacy, and a personal opponent of Middleton, was tried for sedition, and was executed a few days after Argyle.

11. **Archbishop Sharp.**—Now thoroughly alarmed, the Presbyterians sent James Sharp, minister of Crail, to London, to plead their cause with the King. But Sharp was won over to the King's party, and returned to Scotland as Archbishop of St. Andrews and Primate. Three other clergymen (of whom Robert Leighton was one) were made Bishops, and to them, along with Sharp, the government of the Church was committed.

12. **Conventicles.**—In the following year an Act was passed condemning the Covenant as illegal, and another requiring ministers to be ordained by the new bishops. 1662 Rather than submit to that, four hundred of them left their churches and their livings. After that they met their

congregations on hill-sides and lonely moors; but the Parliament passed a Conventicle Act making such meetings unlawful, and forbidding ejected ministers to go within twenty miles of their former parishes. Troopers, led by Sir James Turner, scoured the country, fining, robbing, and abusing innocent persons.

13. **The Pentland Rising.**—This was borne quietly for a year or two; but at last the people were goaded into rebellion. A rising took place in Kirkcudbright, and about a thousand men marched to Edinburgh; but they were defeated Nov. by General Dalziel at Rullion Green. Many executions 1666 followed, and torture was often resorted to, the terrible "thumbscrew" and the infamous "boot" being the instruments used.

New Words in this Lesson.

ad-hē'ent	ex-trav'a-gant	in-ter-fēr'ence	re-sort'ed
com-plied'	gor'geous	liv'er-ies	rev-el-ry
com-po-si'tion	har'mo-ny	Pri'mate	re-vered'
e-ject-ed	he-red'i-tar-y	re-ac'tion-ar-y	se-di'tion
e-lec'tions	in-fa-mous	Re-scis-sor-y	thūmb-screw

Notes and Meanings.

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1 Revelry, noisy feasting. | 10 Sedition, an offence next to treason in the eye of the law. |
| 2 Canongate, a long street stretching from Holyrood to the beginning of High Street. | 11 Crail, in the easterly part of Fife. |
| Kinneff, a parish in Kincardine. | 12 Ejected, driven out. |
| 4 Hereditary, by descent. | 13 Rullion Green, on the south side of the Pentland Hills, 5 miles from Edinburgh. |
| 6 Reactionary, going back. | Infamous, horrible; unspeakable. |
| Rescissory, repealing; literally, cutting off. | |

Questions:—1. How was the King's return regarded by the Scots? Why had they little reason to be thankful for it? 2. What took place on New-Year's Day 1661? 3. Who was Lord High Commissioner? 4. Who was more powerful than he? 5. How were the Members bound to the King's service? 6. What was the Act Rescissory? 7. What did Charles and Middleton resolve respecting Argyle? 8. On what charge was he condemned? 9. Of what did he warn his friends? 10. What was the fate of James Guthrie? 11. Whom did the Presbyterians send to London? What happened there? 12. What led many of the clergy to quit their livings? 13. What was the Battle of Rullion Green?

25. TIMES OF THE CABAL.

1. **Fall of Clarendon.**—Lord Chancellor Clarendon lost the friendship of the King, whose mind was poisoned against him by worthless favourites. His enemies charged him 1667 at the bar of the House of Lords with high treason; but, on a hint from his son-in-law, the Duke of York, he fled to France, where he spent the remainder of his days.

2. **The Cabal Ministry.**—Five men, the initials of whose names by a strange coincidence form the word Cabal, then became the chief advisers of the King. They were Clifford, Arlington, Buckingham, Ashley, and Lauderdale. So evil was their advice, and so strong the hatred of them felt by the people, that the word "Cabal," which was at first equivalent to "Cabinet," has ever since been used to denote a clique of political schemers; and to "cabal" is to plot or intrigue.

3. **The Treaty of Dover.**—To preserve the balance of power, England, Sweden, and Holland formed, in 1668, a Triple Alliance against Louis the Fourteenth of France. While Charles openly professed hostility to Louis, he was secretly in the pay of that monarch, receiving a pension of £200,000 a year. A secret treaty between the monarchs was signed at Dover, of which the principal terms were, that Charles May, should declare himself a Roman Catholic; should fight 1670 for Louis against the Dutch; and should support his claims on Spain. Louis on his part promised money, and an army to quell the English if they dared to rebel.

4. **War with Holland.**—The Dutch War having been renewed in 1672, an English fleet put to sea. The Duke of York gained a hard-won victory over De Ruyter in Southwold Bay (Suffolk). Louis crossed the Rhine and ravaged the United Provinces; but the Dutch, acting under the orders of William of Orange, broke down their dikes: the water rushed over the land, and the French soldiers had to flee for their lives. England made peace with Holland in 1674.

5. **The King's Creditors.**—One of the most disgraceful acts of Charles was the closing of the Exchequer or Treasury. About £1,300,000 had been advanced to the King by London merchants, at a high rate of interest. One day they received a

message from the King that their money was not to be repaid! A general panic followed, and trade was for a time at a standstill.

6. **The Test Act.**—The feeling of the Parliament against the Roman Catholics was shown in the Test Act, by which all persons who held public appointments were compelled to receive the communion in the Church of England, and to take an oath against transubstantiation. In consequence of this, the Duke of York, who was a Roman Catholic, was superseded in the command of the fleet by Prince Rupert.

7. **Latimer Prime Minister.**—Early in 1674 the Cabal Ministry was driven from office; and Viscount Latimer, afterwards Earl of Danby, became Prime Minister. Ashley, now Earl of Shaftesbury, became leader of the Opposition, and began to scheme for the exclusion of the Duke of York from the succession, and in favour of the Duke of Monmouth.

8. **The Popish Plot.**—In 1678, Titus Oates, a clergyman disgraced for vicious habits, came forward with the story of a "Popish Plot" to murder the King and to massacre all Protestants. Shaftesbury and his friends eagerly professed their belief in the plot. All England went mad with fear. It was an English Reign of Terror, and many Roman Catholics were unjustly put to death. Titus Oates was rewarded with a pension of £1,200 a year, and rooms were given to him in Whitehall. Encouraged by his success, new perjurers discovered new plots, and many executions followed.

9. **The Council of Thirty.**—An impeachment of Danby in 1675 had broken down; but his fall was now hastened by the discovery of a letter in which he craved money from the French King. He was sent to the Tower, where he remained for five years. Sir William Temple then became the adviser of Charles. His favourite scheme was the appointment of a Council of Thirty, to stand between the King and the Parliament. Of this Council Shaftesbury was president.

10. **The Habeas Corpus Act.**—The Parliament of 1679 lasted only four months; but its determined temper was shown in the passing of the Habeas Corpus Act, one of the great defences of English freedom. *It secures the liberty*

of the subject. Formerly, Sovereigns had without remorse left their enemies to pine and waste for years in damp, unwholesome prisons; but, by the Habeas Corpus Act, no Sovereign dare keep even the meanest subject in prison beyond a certain time, without bringing him to a fair trial; and no prisoner once discharged can be tried over again for the same offence.

New Words in this Lesson.

bal'ance	e-quiv'a-lent	in-Y'tials	suc-ces'sion
clique	Ex-cheq-uer	in-trigue'	tran-sub-stan-ti-a'tion
co-in-ci-dence	ex-clu'sion	per-ju-rers	un-whole-some
cred'i-tors	hos-til-i-ty	pro-fessed'	vi'cious

Notes and Meanings.

- Poisoned, corrupted.
- Coincidence, agreement.
- Cabal. It was long believed that the word "cabal" was invented from this circumstance; but it was in use before that time. It is a word of Hebrew origin, and means a secret conclave.
- Ashley, Lord Ashley, and afterwards Earl of Shaftesbury.
- Equivalent to, the same as.
- Clique, party; faction.
- Transubstantiation, the doctrine that the bread and wine in the Communion are changed into the body and blood of Christ.
- Duke of Monmouth, an illegitimate son of Charles.
- Reign of Terror. The period during which the Paris populace (in the time of the great French Revolution) committed wild excesses is so called.
- Perjurers, false swearers.
- Habeas Corpus, a writ addressed to the keeper of a prisoner, requiring him to produce him for trial at a certain time. It is so called from the opening Latin words of the writ—*Habeas Corpus ad faciendum, subjiciendum, et recipiendum*, etc.: "Thou art to produce the body, to do, submit, and receive what the court shall order," etc. These words are addressed to the keeper of the prisoner.

Questions:—1. What led to Clarendon's fall? 2. Who formed the Cabal Ministry? 3. Between whom was the Treaty of Dover made? What were its terms? 4. How did the Dutch repel the French invasion? 5. How did Charles deal with his London creditors? 6. What was the Test Act? Who was displaced by it? 7. Who became Prime Minister when the Cabal was dismissed? 8. Who originated the Popish Plot? 9. What was Sir William Temple's scheme of government? 10. When was the Habeas Corpus Act passed? What did it secure?

26. CIVIL WAR IN SCOTLAND.

1. **Lauderdale's Policy.**—In Scotland, the Covenanters still suffered great hardships at the hands of Lauderdale and Sharp. Lauderdale became Secretary of State in 1667. Two years

After he was appointed the first Commissioner and President of the Council. He then carried out more fearful acts than ever. His Council, which was to govern Scotland, took the Privy Council and to make it Hamilton powerful.

The nobles headed by the Duke of Hamilton, complain of the Earl of Lauderdale's administration; but in 1678 Charles showed his regard for him by making him a Duke and he was in fact more powerful than ever. In 1674 the Privy Council was dissolved, and a new Council, more entirely devoted to Lauderdale, took its place. Successive measures, growing more and more stringent every year, continued to be passed against conventicles. In 1678 a Highland host was raised to carry out these measures, and it ravaged the western Lowlands without mercy. No man could leave Scotland without special permission from the Council. The more and worse grievances were for a long time quietly borne, but at length the sufferings of the people became unbearable, and they were goaded to madness.

3. Murder of Sharp.—One of the first signs of the frenzy was the murder of Archbishop Sharp on Magus Moor, near St. Andrews. A party of twelve, at the head of whom were Hackston of Rathillet and Balfour of Burleigh, while lying in wait on the moor for another victim, saw the coach of Sharp approaching. Taking a sudden and desperate resolve, they dragged him from his seat and slew him before his daughter's eyes.

4. Drumclog and Bothwell Bridge.—It had long been the custom for troopers to scour the country in search of conventicles. This led the Presbyterians to carry sword and pistol, as well as Bible, to their meetings. Many a sharp and bloody conflict was the result. At Drumclog, June 1. Graham of Claverhouse and his dragoons—long the terror of conventicles—were scattered in flight before the stern Covenanters. Four thousand men were soon in arms under a man named Hamilton, and took post at Bothwell Bridge, to defend the passage of the Clyde.

5. The Duke of Monmouth was sent hastily from London, and advanced to the attack. There was disunion on religious and political questions in the Covenanting army; and the

handful of men that held the bridge, being left without support, were soon swept away. Three hundred Covenanters died on the field; twelve hundred surrendered. Of these, some were executed, others were transported to Barbadoes. Those who escaped from the field remained under arms, led and encouraged by two preachers, Donald Cargill and Richard Cameron, the founder of the Cameronians.

6. The Sanquhar Declaration.—Hitherto the people had remained unshaken in their loyalty; but now that began to give way. In June 1680, Richard Cameron, with a score of zealous followers, all well armed, entered the town of Sanquhar. They marched to the market-place, and 1680 there read to the town-people a paper in which they threw off their allegiance, declared Charles a tyrant, and solemnly passed on him and his brother, the Duke of York, sentence of excommunication. In the following month, the Cameronians, commanded by Hackston of Rathillet, were defeated at Aird's Moss, and Cameron was slain (July 20).

7. The Duke of York had visited Scotland in the previous year. He now returned to it with the full authority of Lord High Commissioner, and took Lauderdale's place at the Privy Council. In a Parliament held at Edinburgh in 1681, a Test Act was passed, binding all persons to resist change in Church or in State. The oath was generally taken, but the Earl of Argyle would take it only in a certain sense. He was tried and convicted on a charge of "leasing-making," and was imprisoned; but he succeeded in escaping to Holland. The Duke of York exceeded his predecessor in the severity of his measures against the Covenanters. When he returned to England in the following year, he left orders that additional troops should be sent to the suspected districts. Many timid hearts yielded an outward obedience; others fled to the American colonies. In these sufferings, the Puritans of England had no small share.

New Words in this Lesson.

ad-dit-ion-al
ad-min-is-tra-tion
con-vict-ed
dis-un-ion

ex-com-mu-ni-ca-tion
fren-zy
per-mis-sion
pre-de-cis-sor

se-ver-i-ty
sol-lemn-ly
strin-gent
trans-port-ed

Notes and Meanings.

- 2 Administration, direction of the government.
Stringent, strict; severe.
- 3 Magus Moor, in Fife, near St. Andrews.
- 4 Drumclog, in the west of Lanarkshire, south of Glasgow. (Map, p. 12.)
Bothwell Bridge, a bridge on the Clyde in Lanarkshire, near Hamilton. It was only 12 feet wide, with a gate in the centre.
- 5 Barbadoes, a British island in the West Indies.
- 6 Cargill. He was executed July 20, 1681.
- 6 Sanquhar (*Sank'war*), in Dumfriesshire, north-west of Thornhill.
Excommunication, depriving of Church privileges; forbidding from taking the communion.
- Aird's Moss, in Ayrshire, south of Drumclog.
- 7 Earl of Argyle, Archibald, son of the Marquis, executed in 1661.
Convicted, found guilty.
Leasing-making, sowing discord between the King and his people.

Questions:—1. What was Lauderdale's policy? 2. For what purpose was the Highland host raised? 3. In what circumstances was Sharp murdered? 4. Who gained the victory at Drumclog? 5. And at Bothwell Bridge? Who were the Cameronians? 6. What was the Sanquhar Declaration? Where was Cameron killed? 7. Who succeeded Lauderdale in 1680? What Act was passed in 1681? Who fled in consequence?

27. ABSOLUTE MONARCHY AGAIN.

1. **Petitioners and Abhorrrers.**—While the Duke of York was in Scotland there was a violent outcry for the assembling of Parliament. It was led by Shaftesbury, who a short time previously had been removed from the Council. On his advice, numerous "petitions" were sent to the King by the country party, praying for the calling of Parliament. The court party sent in addresses, on the other side, expressing "abhorrence" of this interference with the royal prerogative. The two parties were therefore known as the Petitioners and the Abhorrrers—names which soon gave place to the more familiar ones, Whig and Tory.

2. **The Exclusion Bill.**—The Parliament did not meet till October 1680. A Bill to exclude the Duke of York from the succession, on the ground that he was a Roman Catholic, passed the Commons by a majority of seventy-nine votes; but it was thrown out in the House of Lords, chiefly by means of the powerful speeches of the Earl of Halifax, and Charles and his brother once more felt secure.

3. **Ruling without Parliament.**—The Parliament was dis-

solved in January 1681. The King called a new Parliament at Oxford on March 21, as the excitement in London ran too high. It was a repetition of the Oxford Parliament of 1258. The chief members of the country party, Shaftesbury among them, attended in arms and accompanied by their followers. Charles dissolved the Parliament before it had done any business, March 28. This was Charles's last Parliament. He then adopted severe measures against his enemies. The Duke of Monmouth was made to pay for his popularity by finding security for his good conduct. His friends were tried and fined. Shaftesbury fled to Holland, where he died in 1683. Charles ruled as an absolute monarch till the end of his reign.

4. **Monmouth's Conspiracy.**—The friends of liberty despaired of gaining anything from Charles, or while Charles lived. They expected no more from his brother James, his destined successor. There was only one way in which 1683 the Constitution could be restored—that was by changing the succession at Charles's death. With this view a scheme was formed for securing the recognition of Monmouth as the legitimate son of Charles. The Earl of Essex, William, Lord Russell, and Algernon Sidney, took a leading share in the plot, which spread its roots far and wide.

5. **The Rye House Plot.**—A set of middle-class men formed, without the knowledge, as it seems, of Monmouth or of Russell, a design to murder the King on his return from Newmarket races. Their plan was to overturn a cart near the Rye House, a roadside farm, and then to shoot the King during the stoppage of the coach. Thus there was a plot within a plot. All was soon discovered; the two plots were treated as one; and the vengeance of the King was roused. Monmouth fled to the Continent; Russell and Sidney died on the scaffold; Essex died by his own hand in the Tower. Many of low degree were hanged during this and the following year. The discovery of these plots brought fresh troubles on the Presbyterians. Baillie of Jerviswood, a Scottish gentleman, was executed on the charge of having been concerned in it. Other Scotsmen were punished with different degrees of severity.

6. **The Test Act dispensed with.**—On the very day on which Russell was beheaded, the University of Oxford passed a

decree declaring the necessity of passive obedience. Encouraged by this declaration, Charles put in operation the penal laws against all who opposed his measures. Wealthy merchants were heavily fined for what was called sedition. Those who were not worth fining were put in the pillory. One of Charles's latest acts was to dispense with the Test Act, in order to restore the Duke of York to his office of Lord High Admiral, and to his seat in the Council.

7. **Death of Charles.**—Charles died after an illness of less than a week, on 14th February 1685. He had previously declared himself a Roman Catholic, and had received the last rites of the Church from a priest named Huddleston, who was brought to his bedside. Apoplexy, epilepsy, and even poison, were assigned as the causes of his death.

8. **His Character.**—Perhaps the only good point about Charles the Second was his gay and buoyant disposition, which carried him through many reverses, and gained for him the name of "The Merry Monarch." He was a mean-spirited, treacherous, dissolute man. Thoroughly vicious himself, he scoffed at the idea of virtue or honour in others.

New Words in this Lesson.

ab-hor'-rence	Con-spir'-a-cy	ex-clude'	pre-rog'-a-tive
Ab-hor'-rers	des-tined	le-git-i-mate	rec-og-ni'-tion
ap'-o-plex-y	dis-po-si'-tion	pas-sive	rep-e-ti'-tion
as-signed'	dis-so-lute	Pe-ti'-tion-ers	se-cu'-ri-ty
buoy'-ant	ep'i-lep-sy	pil'-lor-y	treach'-er-ous

Notes and Meanings.

1 Abhorrence, strong dislike.

Royal prerogative, the King's peculiar right or privilege.

Whig, Tory. *Whig* is variously derived from *whay* (sour milk), a name given by the Cavaliers to the sober Covenanters of Scotland; and from *Whig, whig* (Get on, get on), a cry used by carters to their horses in the west of Scotland. *Tory* is from *Toree* (Give me), a name applied to robbers who infested the woods and bogs of Ireland.

2 Earl of Halifax. George Saville was made a Peer for helping to bring about the Restoration, and was

made a Marquis in 1682 for opposing the Exclusion Bill. His tract, *The Character of a Trimmer*, reflects the policy of his career.

3 The Oxford Parliament, sometimes called the Mad Parliament, met in the reign of Henry III., and passed the Provisions of Oxford.

4 Earl of Essex, a different family from that of the Parliamentary general, who died in 1646. This Essex was a son of a Cavalier, Lord Capel, who was beheaded in 1649.

William, Lord Russell, son of the Duke of Bedford.

Algernon Sidney, second son of Robert, Earl of Leicester.	6 The pillory, a wooden frame erected in a public place, with holes in it through which the head and the hands of a criminal were put as a punishment.
5 Newmarket, north-east of Cambridge.	
Rye House, in Hertfordshire, north of London.	8 Dissolute, loose in morals.

Questions:—1. Who were the Petitioners and the Abhorers? 2. What was the object of the Exclusion Bill? 3. When was Charles's last Parliament dissolved? 4. What scheme did the friends of liberty form? Who were the leaders in the plot? 5. With what other plot was this one mixed up? Who were put to death for it? 6. For what purpose did Charles dispense with the Test Act? 7. When did Charles die? 8. What was his character?

JAMES II.

Born 1633 A.D.—Son of Charles I.—Married (1) Anne Hyde; (2) Mary of Modena—Reigned 1685–1688 A.D.—Died 1701 A.D.

SUMMARY OF THE REIGN.

1685. Parliament meets—Rochester Prime Minister—Danby and the Roman Catholic Peers are released—Argyle lands in Scotland to support Monmouth, but is captured and executed—Monmouth lands in Dorsetshire; is defeated at Sedgemoor, captured and executed—His followers cruelly persecuted by Kirke and Jeffreys.
1686. James dispenses with the Test Act in the case of the army—Forms a standing army at Hounslow Heath.
1687. Father Petre becomes the King's adviser—The King begins to meddle with the Universities.
1688. All ministers are required to read the *Declaration of Indulgence* from their pulpits—Execution of James Renwick at Edinburgh—The Primate and six Bishops draw up a petition against the Declaration—They are sent to the Tower; are tried, and acquitted—The Prince of Orange is invited to take the throne—He lands at Torbay—James flees.
1689. The Convention passes the *Declaration of Right*—William and Mary are declared King and Queen—The Revolution completed.

28. THE INVASIONS OF ARGYLE AND MONMOUTH.

1. **Parliament meets again.**—The Duke of York, who succeeded his brother as King James the Second, declared his resolution to govern according to the laws, and to uphold the Church of England. He at once called a Parliament—the first that had met for four years; and he chose as Prime Minister his

brother-in-law, the Earl of Rochester, a staunch Tory. The Commons voted him a yearly revenue of £1,900,000; but already he was in the pay of Louis of France.

2. The English and Scottish exiles at Amsterdam at once resolved that the Earl of Argyle should descend on Scotland, and that Monmouth should about the same time attempt the invasion of England. These exiles persuaded themselves that England and Scotland, weary of their long oppression, only waited an opportunity to shake off the yoke of James. The double invasion of Great Britain was therefore planned.

3. **Argyle's Expedition.**—The expedition sailed. In May, Argyle landed on Cantire, and summoned the Campbells to arms. He had along with him Sir Patrick Hume and Sir John Cochrane. Argyle was a man too evidently wanting in 1685 the stern decision of a warrior. His idea was, to begin operations in that part of the West Highlands where his great clan influence lay, to arm his vassals, and then to descend to the low country. Hume and Cochrane, on the other hand, insisted on advancing at once into the Lowlands, in the hope of raising the western shires. Much time was lost in these disputes.

4. At last the Lowland expedition was determined on. But the loss of time was the loss of everything. When Argyle crossed the river Leven, near Dumbarton, he found his little army nearly surrounded by the royal troops. He was for giving battle, but his council of war decided that it were better to give their enemies the slip, keep clear of Glasgow, and get into a friendly county. Accordingly, leaving large fires burning in their camp, they began the intended movement by night. When day dawned, they found themselves on the banks of the Clyde, near Kilpatrick. Here the leaders came to an open rupture. The dispirited army broke up and scattered. Argyle was reduced to seek safety in flight without a single attendant.

5. He crossed the Clyde, and came to Inchinnan ford, on the little river Cart. Some militia-men fell on him, and, after a short struggle, struck him down. In falling he exclaimed, "Unfortunate Argyle!" The soldiers pitied him: June 30, 1685 some of them even wept, when they knew whom they had taken; but they durst not let him go. He was taken to Renfrew, and thence to Edinburgh, where he

died by the axe of the "maiden," as his father had died four-and-twenty years before.

6. **Monmouth's Expedition.**—Towards the end of June, Monmouth landed at Lyme, in Dorsetshire. The lower orders flocked in hundreds to join him; but the nobles and gentlemen held aloof. At Taunton, he assumed the title of King. Bent on the conquest of Bristol, then the second city in the kingdom, he marched to the walls of Bath. Losing heart there, he fell back to Bridgewater.

7. At Sedgemoor, in the neighbourhood, lay a Royalist army of three thousand men. Monmouth, hoping to surprise the royal troops, advanced from Bridgewater in the dead of night. As he crossed the moor he came to a deep, black ditch, of which his guides had not told him. Delay and confusion followed, and a pistol went off by accident. Instantly the royal drums beat to arms, and a heavy fire of musketry opened on the rebels. Monmouth fled. His foot soldiers, after fighting long and bravely, were scattered by the royal artillery. Two days later, Monmouth was found near the New Forest, lurking July 6, 1685 in a ditch, with his pockets half full of raw pease. He was at once sent to London, and was executed on Tower Hill. No battle has been fought on English ground since the day of Sedgemoor.

8. **Treatment of the Rebels.**—The task of punishing the unhappy rebels was intrusted to Colonel Percy Kirke, who hanged them by scores on the sign-post of the White Hart Inn at Taunton. Then Chief-Justice Jeffreys opened at Winchester the circuit known as the Bloody Assize. More than three hundred perished in the judicial massacre; and crowds who escaped death were doomed to suffer imprisonment or exile.

New Words in this Lesson.

As-size'	dis-pir'-it-ed	ju-di'-cial	rup'-ture
cir'-cuit	ex-claimed'	neigh'-bour-hood	sin'-gle

Notes and Meanings.

- | | |
|--|---|
| <p>1 Resolution, intention.
Earl of Rochester, Lawrence Hyde, second son of the Earl of Clarendon. A few months later he refused (794)</p> | <p>to become a Roman Catholic, quarrelled with James, and retired.
3 Cantire, a peninsula in the south-west of Argyleshire.</p> |
|--|---|

Sir Patrick Hume. He represented Berwickshire in the Scottish Parliament. He was obliged to take refuge in Holland on account of his connection with Monmouth's conspiracy. After the Revolution he was created Baron Polwarth and Earl of Marchmont.

Sir John Cochrane of Ochiltree, second son of the Earl of Dundonald. He also was implicated in Monmouth's conspiracy. For his share in Argyle's invasion he was condemned to death; but his daughter robbed the mail of the bag containing the warrant for his execution, and his father obtained a par-

don for him by bribing the King's confessor.
 4 Kilpatrick, a few miles west of Glasgow, Rupture, breach; quarrel.
 5 Inchinnan, in Renfrewshire.
 6 Taunton, in Somersetshire; north-west of Lyme.
 Bridgewater, north-east of Taunton.
 7 Sedgemoor, east of Bridgewater.
 New Forest, in the south-west of Hampshire.
 8 Circuit, a round or journey made by a judge for the purpose of holding courts.
 Assize, the sittings of a court held by commission to a judge.
 Judicial, legal; by order of a judge.

Questions:—1. What resolution did James II. declare? 2. What did the exiles at Amsterdam determine to do? 3. Who were with Argyle? What difference of opinion arose? 4. On what point did the council of war decide against Argyle? Where did the army break up? 5. What was Argyle's fate? 6. When and where did Monmouth land? 7. What led to the Battle of Sedgemoor? What caused Monmouth's failure? What was his fate? 8. To whom was the punishment of the rebels intrusted?

29. THE DECLARATIONS OF INDULGENCE.

1. **James's Design.**—James then began to unfold his grand design, namely, the complete restoration of Roman Catholicism in Great Britain. He released all Roman Catholics from 1686 penalties, by claiming the right to dispense with the Test Act. He placed the whole Church under the control of a Court of Ecclesiastical Commission. He formed a standing army at Hounslow Heath, officered chiefly by Roman Catholics, for the purpose of forcing the nation into submission.

2. James's chief advisers were the Earl of Sunderland and Father Edward Petre, a Jesuit priest. Sunderland was a political schemer, who, while President of the Council of James, was at the same time engaged in intrigues with the Prince of Orange and the King of France. Petre was James's confessor, and was Sunderland's tool in moulding the King to his plans. Scotland was placed under Drummond, 1687 Earl of Perth. The Earl of Tyrconnel was made Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland.

3. James then began to meddle with the Universities. The

Vice-Chancellor of Cambridge lost his office, because he opposed the granting of a degree to a Benedictine monk. At Oxford, a Roman Catholic Bishop was placed over Magdalen College, and twelve Fellows of the same religion were appointed in one day.

4. The crisis was now fast approaching. The King's advisers adopted the policy of making friends of the Nonconformists in order to combine their influence with that of the Roman Catholics against the Established Church. With this view two Declarations of Indulgence were issued, giving liberty of conscience to all who were not members of the Church of England,—the second in April 1688. A week later Apr. 27, 1688 there followed an Order in Council, commanding all ministers to read this Declaration from their pulpits.

5. **The Cameronians.**—In Scotland, most of the Presbyterian ministers availed themselves of the liberty granted them of returning to their parishes. But the strict Covenanters, called Cameronians, continued their field meetings; and James Renwick, one of their ministers, was arrested, and was executed at Edinburgh. This was the last life sacrificed in the terrible struggle which had convulsed Scotland for nearly thirty years.

6. **The Seven Bishops.**—The London clergy refused to read the Declaration; and Archbishop Sancroft, with six Bishops, drew up a petition against it, and were committed to the Tower for their disobedience. The trial of the Seven Bishops took place before the Court of King's Bench. They June 29, were charged with having published a false, malicious, and seditious libel. The four Judges were divided in their opinion, two against two. The jury was locked up all night, and at ten next morning the court met to hear the verdict. There was deep silence; but when the words "Not guilty" left the foreman's lips, cheer after cheer echoed through the court.

7. The crowd outside took up the joyful sound, and all London was soon filled with shouts of gladness. That night the city was a blaze of illumination. Rows of seven candles—a taller one in the middle for the Archbishop—lit up every window; bonfires were in every street; and rockets soared by hundreds from the rejoicing city.

8. Enraged by defeat, James resolved to crush the spirit

of the nation for the sake of arms and by the advice of the Irish soldiers. He brought over several regiments of Irish soldiers. He was called from it "Lillibulero," the whole nation and special the army in a flame against James and the Irish troops. It was sung and whistled everywhere.

9. Invitation to William.—On the very day of the Bishops' acquittal a letter, signed by some of the leading nobles and lords of England, was sent to William, Prince of Orange, as the nephew and son-in-law of James, entreating him to come with an army and aid them in defending their freedom and their faith. Common wrongs and the sense of common danger had put out of sight party distinctions for the time, and even united the Whigs and the Tories.

10. William accepting the call, began to make great preparations for the expedition; while James, still holding on in his course, despised the warnings and the offered aid of Louis the Fourteenth. Nor did he awake to a sense of his danger till he heard from his minister at the Hague that he had received the sanction of the States-General, and had published a Declaration giving reasons for the invasion of England.

11. James's flight.—James had no time to lose. In a few hours he yielded almost all the points for which he had been contending during three years. He dissolved the Ecclesiastical Commission, he removed Sunderland and Petre from the Council, and promised to call a Parliament. He found that he possessed a fleet of thirty sail, and an army of forty thousand regular troops. But all was to no purpose. The hearts of the people were estranged from him, and their eyes looked eagerly over the sea for the sails of William's squadron.

New Words in this Lesson.

acquit-tal	de-spatch	il-lu-mi-na-tion	pen'al-ties
in-vol-un-tary	dis-sol-u-tion	in-dul-gence	sanc-tion
entreat-ing	treas-ur-ing	il-bel	se-di-tious
un-wil-ling	stran-ger	ma-li-cious	ver-dict

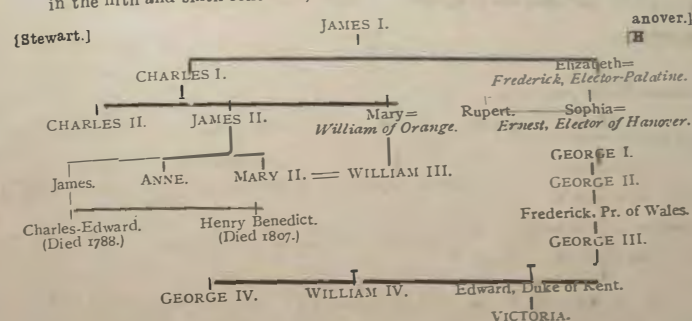
Notes and Meanings.

1. Declaration, proclamation; Decree.
2. Southern Route, in Middlesex, a

few miles west of London; once famous for highway robberies.

- 2 Sunderland, Robert, pence, one of the basest of English statesmen. He became a Roman Catholic to please James. After the Revolution he wormed himself into the favour of William III., and became his chief adviser. He died in 1702.
- 3 A Benedictine monk, a monk of the order of St. Benedict, who lived in the fifth and sixth centuries, and

- founded the earliest monasteries in Western Europe.
- 4 agdalen, pronounced *Maudlin*.
- 5 Convulsed, moved violently; agitated.
- 6 malicious, bearing ill-will; pitiful. Seditious, offensive to the state. Foreman, leader of a jury.
- 9 Acquittal, declaring not guilty. Nephew and son-in-law. This is shown in the following table:—



10 States General, Parliament.

11 Estranged, turned away.

Questions:—1. What was James's grand design? 2. Who were his chief advisers? 3. How did he meddle with the university? 4. What were the Declarations of Indulgence? 5. How were they received in Scotland? 6. For what were the seven bishops tried? 7. How was their acquittal received in London? 8. What troops did James call his aid? 9. What was invited to take the throne? 10. When did James find out his danger? 11. What did he then try to do? With what result?

30. THE REVOLUTION.

1. Landing of William.—Though delayed for a time by storms, the Prince of Orange landed safely and unopposed at Torbay in Devonshire. Under torrents of rain, along roads deep with mire, he advanced slowly with his force of fifteen thousand men through Newton-Abbot, and in four days reached Exeter, where he was received with joy as the champion of the Protestant faith. There, on the following Sunday, he heard his friend Dr. Burnet preach from the cathedral pulpit.

Nov. 5,
1688

2. A week passed without anything to encourage him; but thereafter the Earl of Abingdon entered his camp, and was soon followed by other officers of James. The King hastened to Salisbury, resolved to stake his kingdom on the issue of a great battle. But the policy of William was to avoid bloodshed, and to trust rather to time and to that English temper which he knew to be thoroughly aroused against James. A few trifling skirmishes took place, but nothing more. In rapid succession Lord Churchill, afterwards the great Duke of Marlborough; Prince George of Denmark, married to the King's daughter Anne; and even Anne herself, abandoned the falling King.

3. **Flight of James.**—James then resolved on flight. He sent his wife and his son to France; and, when he knew of their safety, he left his palace under cover of darkness, and made his way to Sheerness, where a small vessel, of the kind then called a *hoy*, waited for him. While crossing the Thames he threw the Great Seal into the water, in the hope that this would confuse all the plans of the new Government. With the flight of James (December 11, 1688) his reign is held to have come to an end.

4. James had scarcely gone on board the hoy, when some Kentish fishermen, attracted by the hope of plunder, seized him and kept him a close prisoner. Soon released by an order from the Lords, he returned to the capital and passed thence Dec. 23, 1688 to Rochester. A second attempt to escape succeeded, and the news soon came that James had arrived safely at St. Germain, and had been warmly welcomed by Louis.

5. **The Convention.**—Meanwhile William passed from Windsor to London, where he called an assembly, known as Jan. 22, 1689 the Convention. The throne was declared vacant, and great debates ensued on the settlement of affairs. Some proposed a Regency; others that Mary should be Queen, while William should hold the title of King for her lifetime only. Both plans were pointedly rejected by William, who declared that he would go back to Holland rather than accept a position inferior to that of his wife.

6. **The Declaration of Right.**—A document, called the Declaration of Right, was then drawn up and passed. It determined in favour of the Parliament all the points in dispute

with the Stewart Kings. William and Mary were declared King and Queen of England, the chief administration resting with him. The crown was settled first on the children of Mary; then on those of her sister Anne; and, these failing, on the children of William by any other wife.

7. The great English Revolution was now complete. Thus terminated the grand struggle between Sovereign and Parliament, in the adjustment and firm establishment of the three great Estates of the Realm,—the King, the Lords, and the Commons; on whose due balance and mutual check the strength of the Constitution mainly depends.

8. James spent the remaining twelve years of his life at St. Germain, a pensioner on the bounty of Louis. There he died in 1701. His zeal for the Roman Catholic Church, strengthened and sharpened by the thirst for despotic power common to all the Stewarts, cost him his throne. His perversity and petty spite, his childishness and meanness, are manifest in every page of his history. The diligence and punctuality in business, for which he was remarkable, were in his case instruments of the worst tyranny.

New Words in this Lesson.

a-ban'doned	dil'i-gence	pen'sion-er	Rev-o-lu'tion
ad-just-ment	e-stab'lish-ment	per-vers'i-ty	sharp-ened
child'ish-ness	man'i-fest	point'ed-ly	ter-min-ät-ed
de-spot'ic	mu'tu-al	punc-tu-al'i-ty	un-op-posed'

Notes and Meanings.

- 1 Dr. Burnet. Gilbert Burnet; born at Edinburgh in 1643. He had spent some time in Holland, and accompanied William as his chaplain. In 1689 he was made Bishop of Salisbury. He wrote a "History of His Own Time." Died 1715.
- 2 Anne, Queen from 1702 till 1714. Abandoned, left; deserted.
- 3 Sheerness, on the island of Sheppey, in the mouth of the Thames.
- 4 Rochester, on the Medway, in Kent. St. Germain, a palace near Paris, where James lived till his death in 1701.
- 6 Declaration of Right, converted into the *Bill of Rights* in October.
- 7 Terminated, came to an end. Adjustment, settling in relation to one another.
- 8 Perversity, stubbornness. Punctuality, exactness.

Questions:—1. Where did William land? 2. What did James resolve to do? What was William's policy? 3. Where did James first take ship? 4. Who made him a prisoner? Where did he at last find refuge? 5. What plans for settling the government did William reject? 6. What were the provisions of the Declaration of Right? 7. In what did the Revolution terminate? 8. Where and when did James die? What was his character?

WILLIAM III. AND MARY II.

WILLIAM III. AND MARY II.

William: Born 1650 A.D. Grandson of Charles II.—Married Mary II. Stewart—Reigned 1689-1702 A.D.
 Mary: Born 1661 A.D. Daughter of James II.—Married William of Orange—Reigned 1689-1694 A.D.

SUMMARY OF THE REIGN.

1689. The Convention is turned into a Parliament—Halifax and Caermarthen (Danby) are the Chief Ministers—The *Mutiny Act* is passed—The *Toleration Act* is passed—The Declaration of Right is made a Statute and called *The Bill of Rights*—Dundee's rising for James in Scotland is quelled at Killiecrankie—James lands in Ireland—Raising of the Siege of Londonderry.
1690. The Convention Parliament is dissolved—William lands in Ireland and defeats James at the Boyne—The Scottish General Assembly meets again, after an interval of thirty years.
1691. *Pacification of Limerick*—The Highland clans required to take the oath.
1692. Massacre of the Macdonalds of Glencoe—War with France—Naval victory off La Hogue—Defeat of William at Steenkirk.
1693. Beginning of the National Debt.
1694. Establishment of the Bank of England—Triennial Parliaments—Death of Queen Mary—Freedom of the Press established.
1695. Siege of Namur—It surrenders.
1698. Act regulating *Trials for Treason*—The Bank of Scotland founded.
1697. *Treaty of Ryswick*, with France.
1698. Montagu Prime Minister; first regular English Ministry—Change in the Civil List—Failure of the Darien Company—Peter the Great at Deptford.
1700. Proposed partition of the Spanish dominions between the Dauphin and the Archduke Charles—Godolphin Prime Minister.
1701. Impeachment of Halifax and other ministers—War of the Spanish Succession, between the Emperor Leopold and France—The *Act of Settlement* is passed, giving the succession to the Princess Sophia and the Protestant line—The *Grand Alliance*: England, Germany, and Holland—Whig majority: Godolphin dismissed—Death of James II.
1702. Accident to William—His death.

31. SETTLEMENT OF ENGLAND AND IRELAND.

1. **Coronation of William and Mary.**—On February 13, 1689, the Declaration of Right was formally accepted by William and Mary, who were thereupon proclaimed King and Queen. The Convention was then declared to be a Parliament. A new coronation oath, and new oaths of allegiance and suprem-

acy, were prepared. The coronation took place on April 11, in Westminster Abbey, where the chief ministers of James stood around the double throne. Danby was President of the Council, and was created Marquis of Caermarthen; George, Marquis of Halifax, was Lord Privy Seal.

2. **End of Judge Jeffreys.**—One there was whose crime were too black for pardon. Jeffreys lay in the Tower, to which he had been borne amid the roars of a mob thirsting for his blood. He had been found begrimed with coal dust, and in the dress of a common sailor, lurking in a Wapping ale-house. A few days after his arrest he died.



WILLIAM III.

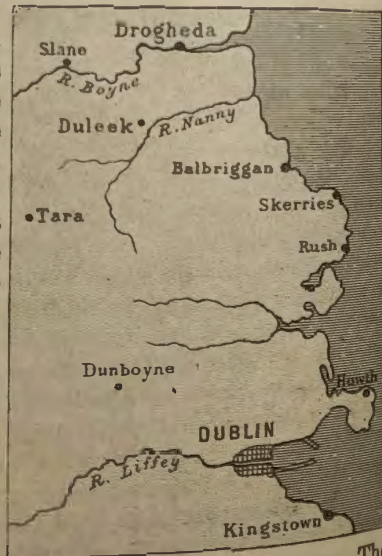
3. **The Mutiny Act.**—In March several Scottish regiments which were in England were ordered abroad. Holding themselves to be at the disposal of the Scottish Parliament alone, they declined to go, and one regiment mutinied. The mutiny was put down by William's Dutch troops; and the *Mutiny Act* was passed, putting soldiers under martial law. This Act is limited to a single year, and must be renewed annually, there is here an indirect provision for Parliament being called together every year at least.

4. **The Toleration Act.**—Bishop Hancock and seven bishops refused to take the oath of allegiance to William, and were suspended from office. The example of the nonjuring bishops was followed by four hundred of the clergy. In May

the Toleration Act was passed, abolishing penalties for absence from the Established Church, and for attending conventicles, but requiring all assemblies for religious worship to be held with open doors. This annulled so much of the Clarendon Code, but the Corporation Act and the Test Act remained in full force till 1828.

5. **The Bill of Rights.**—Towards the end of the year the Declaration of Right was confirmed and extended in the Bill of Rights, which ranks, after *Magna Carta* and the *Habeas Corpus* Act, as the third great charter of British freedom. This Act, besides confirming the settlement of the crown, gave Parliament absolute power over the army and the navy, over the courts of law and the succession to the crown, and thus made it supreme in the State. Early in 1690 the Convention Parliament was dissolved. In the new Parliament the Tories had a decided majority.

6. **The Siege of Londonderry.**—Bloodlessly the great change had been accomplished in England. It was not so, however, either in Scotland or in Ireland. In Ireland James himself made his last vain struggle for the crown. On March 24 he landed at Kinsale, and entered Dublin in triumph. His first great operation was the Siege of Londonderry. The citizens, greatly encouraged by the Rev. George Walker, endured the miseries of famine for more than three months; but at last three ships from England broke the boom of fir-wood laid across the River Foyle, and carried food to the starving garrison. The Irish army at once retreated.



7. **The Battle of the Boyne.**—Marshal Schomberg arrived with sixteen thousand troops: and William, landing at Carrickfergus, found himself at the head of forty thousand men. The last day of June, 1690, brought William to the northern bank of the Boyne, a few miles above Drogheda, with thirty-six thousand troops. The battle began next morning by the army of William commencing to ford the stream at three different points, under a heavy cannonade. The Dutch Guards, emerging from the river, formed under the enemy's fire. Then they dashed on the Irish intrenchments, and swept them clean. Schomberg was slain; but the victory of William was decided. James fled through the Pass of Duleek to Dublin; thence he escaped to France. July 1, 1690

8. **The Pacification of Limerick.**—The war was prolonged for a year. Then was signed the Pacification of Limerick, which made William unquestioned King of Ireland. 1691 About twelve hundred Irishmen crossed to France, and formed the "Irish Brigade" in the army of Louis. Thenceforth William held the crown securely.

New Words in this Lesson.

an-nu-al-ly	can-non-ade'	in-trench-ments	pro-longed'
an-nulled'	de-clined'	mu-ti-nied	sus-pend-ed
be-grimed'	e-merg-ing	non-jur-ing	un-ques-tioned
Bri-gade'	in-di-rect'	Paç-if-i-ca-tion	wor-ship

Notes and Meanings.

- 1 Marquis of Halifax. George Saville was made a Peer by Charles II., whose restoration he helped. He offended James by refusing to consent to a repeal of the Test Act, and was dismissed from office.
- 2 Wapping, one of the lowest parts of London. (Map, p. 121.)
- 4 Non-juring, having refused to take the oath of allegiance. Annulled, destroyed; cancelled.
- 6 Kinsale, on south coast of Co. Cork.
- Londonderry, in the north of Ireland, on the Foyle; called Derry before 1615.
- 7 Schomberg. He was a French marshal and an English duke. His father was a German, and his mother an Englishwoman. Cannonade, firing of cannon. Intrenchments, works defended with ditch and parapet. Pass of Duleek, in Co. Meath, south-west of Drogheda.

Questions:—1. Where were William and Mary crowned? 2. Where had Judge Jeffreys been found? 3. What led to the passing of the Mutiny Act? 4. When was the Toleration Act passed? 5. Why is the Bill of Rights important? 6. How long did the Siege of Londonderry last? How was the town relieved? 7. In what battle was William victorious? Who was slain in it? 8. What treaty secured Ireland to William?

32. THE REVOLUTION IN SCOTLAND.

1. **The Scottish Convention.**—A Convention of the Scottish Estates met at Edinburgh in March 1689. It was then declared that James the Seventh had forfeited the crown. By another Act, William and Mary were accepted as King and Queen of Scotland; and Commissioners, of whom Argyle was one, were sent to London to administer to them the coronation oath. But the cause of the Stewarts was not allowed to expire in Scotland without a struggle. Many Scots were loyal to the fallen house, and the Duke of Gordon still held Edinburgh Castle for James.

2. **"Rabbling" the Curates.**—The common people in the south-west showed their hatred of Episcopacy by "rabbling" the curates; that is, by driving them out of their houses and parishes with scoffing and insult. About two hundred parish priests, with their families, were thus treated. On the whole, however, the Scottish people showed forbearance to those oppressors whom the turn of events threw into their power. The only serious outbreak was a riot at Holyrood, caused by the captain of the guard there recklessly firing on a crowd of students and apprentices. The Edinburgh mob rushed to the Palace and killed fourteen of the guard. They stripped the chapel, which had been recently fitted up, and made a bonfire of its furnishings in front of the Palace.

3. **Viscount Dundee.**—Under the new state of things, there was one man who felt that his occupation was gone. That was Graham of Claverhouse, whom James had made Viscount Dundee. When William arrived at St. James's, Dundee was one of the crowd that thronged to give him welcome. He declared himself willing to acquiesce in the new order of things, promised to live in peace, and received an assurance of protection.

4. He went to Edinburgh, and attended the Convention of Estates for a few days. But the Presbyterians were now as free to walk Edinburgh streets as Claverhouse himself. He imagined that he was in danger of being murdered. No arguments of his friends could induce him to remain in Edinburgh. He fled, accompanied by fifty or sixty horsemen, troopers who

had deserted to him from his regiment, and remained for a while at his own castle of Duns, near Dundee.

5. **Rising in the Highlands.**—In June, Edinburgh Castle surrendered; and then Dundee and his Highlanders became the sole hope and stay of the Jacobite party. Repairing to the Highlands, Claverhouse raised the standard of the dethroned King. Several chiefs, who feared that the new Government would compel them to disgorge their spoil, joined him, and he had soon under his command six thousand men; but they dwindled down to less than half that number, marching off every night by forties and fifties, laden with spoil.

6. **Battle of Killiecrankie.**—The army of the Convention, under General Mackay, marched against the Jacobites. It consisted of three thousand foot and some companies of horse; but the men were nearly all raw recruit, and entire strangers to the Highland way of fighting. At the head of the wild and gloomy Pass of Killiecrankie, Mackay found himself in front of the rebels, who occupied the hill on the north side of the valley into which the pass opens.

7. At that time the bayonet was screwed into the muzzle of the musket, so that troops could not fire with bayonets fixed. The Highlanders in dense masses rushed down from the hill. Firing their guns once, they threw them away, and then with target and flashing broadsword they rushed, wildly yelling, on the enemy. Mackay's troops fired a volley which did little harm, and before they could crew on their bayonets the Highlanders were among them. A panic seized Mackay's raw levies, and they broke and fled, pursued and cut down by the relentless Highlanders.

8. **Death of Dundee.**—Claverhouse never knew that he had won the victory. He fell at the beginning of the action, pierced by a musket ball which entered beneath his left arm. His own men, true to their instinct of plunder, tripped his body, and left it naked on the field, where it was with difficulty distinguished from the other bodies of the fallen! After this defeat, the Highland army quickly dispersed, and the whole of Scotland owned William as its master. Episcopacy was then abolished, and the Presbyterian Church was restored and established by law (June 1690).

ac-qui-esce'
ad-min-is-ter
ar-gu-ments
as-sûr-ance
bay-on-et

New Words in this Lesson.
cûr-ates
de-throned'
dis-gorge'
dis-tin'-guished
dwin'-dled
ex-pire'
for-bear'-ance
i-mag'-ined
in'-stinct
oc-cu-pa'-tion

out-break
rab'-bling
re-cent-ly
re-cruits'
re-lent-less

Notes and Meanings.

- 1 Duke of Gordon, George, Marquis of Huntly, made Duke of Gordon in 1644. A Roman Catholic.
- 3 St. James's, a palace in London. Acquiesce in, agree to.
- 5 Jacobite party, supporters of James; from Latin *Jacobus*, James.
- 6 Killiecrankie, in the north of Perthshire, near Blair-Athol.
- 7 Bayonet, a dagger fixed on the end of a musket,—first made at Bayonne in France. Relentless, pitiless.

Questions:—1. What did the Scottish Estates declare? Who held Edinburgh Castle for James? 2. How did the Scots show their forbearance? What was the only exception? 3. What promise did Viscount Dundee make? 4. What fear possessed him in Edinburgh? 5. Where did he raise the standard of James? What led several chiefs to join him? 6. Who commanded the army of the Convention? Where did he meet the rebels? 7. What caused the defeat of the Royalists? 8. What made the victory of no use?

33. THE BATTLE OF KILLIECRANKIE.

1. On the heights of Killiecrankie yester-morn our army lay:
lowly rose the mist in columns from the river's broken way;
Hoar ely roared the swollen torrent, and the pass was wrapped
in gloom,
When the clansmen rose together from their lair amidst the
broom.
Then we belted on our tartans, and our bonnets down we
drew;
And we felt our broad-swords' edges, and we proved them to
be true;
And we prayed the prayer of soldiers, and we cried the gather-
ing cry;
And we clasped the hands of kinsmen, and we swore to do or
die!
Then our leader rode before us on his war-horse black as night—
Vell the Cameronian rebels knew that charger in the fight!
And a cry of exultation from the bearded warriors rose;
For we loved the house of Claver'se, and we thought of good
Montrose.

2. But he raised his hand for silence:—"Soldiers! I have sworn
a vow:

Ere the evening's sun shall glisten on chiehallion's lofty brow,
Either we shall rest in triumph, or another of the same
Shall have died in battle-harness for his country and King
James!

Think upon the Royal Martyr—think of what his race endure—
Think on him whom butchers murdered on the field of Bannockburn
Moor:

By his sacred blood I charge ye—by the ruined hearth and
shrine—

By the blighted hopes of Scotland—by your injuries and mine—
Strike! and drive the trembling rebels back o'er the
stormy Forth:

Let them tell their pale Convention how they fared within the
North;

Let them tell that Highland honour is not to be bought nor
sold—

That we scorn their prince's anger, as we loathe his foreign gold.
Strike! and when the fight is over, if you look in vain for me,
Where the dead are lying thickest, search for him here
Dundee!"

3. Loudly then the hills re-echoed with our answer to his call;
But a deeper echo sounded in the bosoms of us all.
For the lands of wide Breadalbane, not a man who he not him
speak
Would that day have left the battle. Burning eyes and flushing
cheek
Told the clansmen's fierce emotion, and they harder drew their
breath;
For their souls were strong within them—stronger than the
grasp of death.
Soon we heard a challenge-trumpet sounding in the pass below,
And the distant tramp of horses, and the voices of the foe.
Down we crouched amid the bracken, till the Lowland ranks
drew near,
Panting like the hounds in summer when the scent the stately
deer.
From the dark dale emerging, next we saw the squadrons
come.
Loudly foot and horse's troop is marching to the tuck of drum.

Through the scattered wood of birches, o'er the broken ground
and heath,
Wound the long battalion slowly, till they gained the field
beneath.

4. Then we bounded from our covert. Judge how looked the
Saxons then,
When they saw the rugged mountain start to life with armed
men!
Like a tempest down the ridges swept the hurricane of steel;
Rose the slogan of Macdonald—flashed the broad-sword of
Lochiel!
Vainly sped the withering volley 'mongst the foremost of our
band—
On we poured until we met them, foot to foot and hand to hand,
Horse and man went down like drift-wood when the floods are
black at Yule,
And their carcasses are whirling in the Garry's deepest pool:
Horse and man went down before us—living foe there tarried
none
On the field of Killiecrankie when that stubborn fight was done!
W. E. ARTOUN.

New Words in this Lesson.

bat-tal'ion	ex-ul-ta'tion	in'-ju-ries	slo'-gan
beard-ed	glis'ten	loathe	swôl'en
cov'ert	hoarse'ly	re-ech'oed	trem'bling
e-mo'tion	hur'ri-cane	sa'-cred	whirl'ing

Notes and Meanings.

- 1 Killiecrankie. The Highlanders know the battle as that of Rinrory, from the plain at the head of the Lair, place of hiding. (pass. Our leader, John Graham (or Græme) of Claverhouse, Viscount Dundee.
Cameronian rebels, followers of Richard Cameron, slain in 1680.
Exultation, joy; triumph.
Good Montrose, James Graham, Marquis of Montrose, who was defeated at Philiphaugh (1645), and executed in 1650.
- 2 Schiehallion, a mountain in Perthshire, near the scene of the battle. The Royal Martyr, Charles I. Magus Moor, near St. Andrews, where Archbishop Sharp was murdered by a band of Presbyterians in 1679.
Their Prince, Prince William of Orange, then William III.
- 3 Wide Breadalbane, extensive estates in the west of Perthshire.
Emotion, deep feeling.
Bracken, coarse ferns.
Emerging, coming out.

Leslie's foot and Leven's troopers, regiments named after the two Leslie's;—David, Lord Newark, the victor of Philiphaugh, who died in 1682; and Alexander, Lord Leven, who died in 1661.

4 Covert, hiding-place.

The hurricane of steel, the sweep of the Highland broad-swords. (See § 7 of previous lesson.)

The slogan of Macdonald, the war-cry of the clan Macdonald.

Lochiel, Evan Cameron of Lochiel,

who commanded under Claverhouse. His grandson, Donald Cameron, was the chief supporter of Charles-Edward in the 'Forty-five—"Lochiel, Lochiel, beware of the day." Both are referred to in Byron's *Waterloo*: "And Evan's, Donald's fame rings in each clan man's ears."

Yule, Christmas. The Yule log was a large piece of wood put on the fire on Christmas eve.
Carcasses, dead bodies.

34. THE MASSACRE OF GLENCOE.

1. **State of the Highlands.**—Within two years of Killiecrankie, nearly all Scotland had submitted to William; but discontent still smouldered in the Highlands. Many of the clans had not yet submitted to the new King. The remote and mountainous districts which they inhabited had been but lightly touched, if at all, by the oppression of the Stewarts, which had fallen so heavily on the rest of the country. Many of the chieftains, therefore, were friends to the cause of the dethroned King, and only waited a favourable opportunity to rise in arms in his behalf.

2. **"Hedging" Politicians.**—William offered a price for the favour of the chiefs. The Earl of Breadalbane, a man "wise as a serpent, but slippery as an eel," received from Government a large sum of money to be distributed among them. Out of the money thus intrusted to him, the Earl gave handsome donations to a few of the leading chiefs, and a very handsome donation to the Earl. Many who had expected to share were disappointed and enraged. Those who had shared, Breadalbane himself among the rest, were deep in "hedging politics;" that is to say, they held correspondence with the exiled King, while keeping on fair terms with King William! It was well, they thought, to keep in with both Kings till they saw which of them was likely to stand.

3. **The Royal Proclamation.**—William saw well enough that they were playing fast and loose, and resolved on a decisive step.
(794)

Government issued a proclamation, requiring each and all of the chiefs of the clans to take the oath of submission by the last day of December then ensuing. Failing that, they were to be subjected to fire and sword.

4. **Macdonald of Glencoe.**—This proclamation was issued in the month of August. Before the appointed day all the chiefs had taken the oath except one. That was 1691 MacIain, the head of the Macdonalds of Glencoe, an old man, who had fought among the rebels at Killiecrankie. Glencoe—the “vale of tears,” as the name signifies—is a wild glen near the head of Loch Linnhe in Argyshire. Macdonald delayed to take the oath till the fatal 1st of January was close at hand. His motive seems to have been, not so much enmity to William, as discontent with Breadalbane because of the division of the money.

5. Repenting of his obstinacy, in the last week of December he hastened to Fort William, but found that the governor had no authority to receive his oath, and that he must go to the Sheriff of Argyle at Inveraray. A toilsome journey over snowy hills and across swollen floods threw him a day or two late; but he was permitted to take the oath, and went home well pleased, and, as he thought, safe.

6. **The Warrant.**—Sir John Dalrymple, the Master of Stair, then the Secretary of State for Scotland, concealed from William the fact that the chief of Glencoe had taken the oath. William signed a warrant to do military execution with fire and sword upon the Macdonalds. A troop of soldiers under Captain Campbell of Glenlyon, a friend of Breadalbane, marched into the glen, and lived fifteen days on friendly terms among the unsuspecting people. Then the deed of blood was done.

7. **The Massacre.**—It was four o'clock of a dark winter morning; a storm was raging among the hills, and wild blasts, laden with snow-drift, swept down the glen. Suddenly Feb. 13, 1692 the glen rang with musket-shots and shrieks of fear and agony, and the glare of burning cottages lit up the gloom. The beams of the rising sun fell on a mass of smoking ruins, “black with fire, and red with blood.” The butchery was not so complete as had been intended, as many of the Mac-

donalds escaped in the darkness. Thirty-eight of them, however, fell in this atrocious massacre, and many more perished on the snowy hills.

8. **Who were to blame?**—The blame of this foul deed rests chiefly with Breadalbane and Stair. It was Stair who obtained from William the order, signed both at the beginning and at the end, “to extirpate that set of thieves.” Stair himself wrote to the commander-in-chief in Scotland, that he hoped “the soldiers would not trouble the Government with prisoners,” adding, “better not meddle with them than not do it to purpose.” The only excuse made for William is, that he signed the order without knowing the circumstances; but after a Parliamentary inquiry had brought all the circumstances to light, he allowed the perpetrators to go unpunished.

9. **Effect on William.**—The black business certainly caused great prejudice to the government of William. The Jacobites trumpeted the massacre of Glencoe all over Europe, in order to blacken his character. The task of governing Scotland was perplexing enough to William without this. The country swarmed with restless plotters, scheming to bring back King James. Weary with the violent strifes of Scottish factions, and perplexed by the contradictory representations which they poured in upon him, William was provoked to wish “that Scotland were a thousand miles distant from England, and that he had never been its King.”

New Words in this Lesson.

a-tro'cious	en'mi-ty	Par-lia-ment'ar-y	pro-voked'
cir-cum-stanç-es	en-su'ing	per-pe-trat'ors	rep-re-sen-ta'tions
con-tra-dic'to-ry	ex-tir-pate	per-plex'ing	sig'ni-fies
dis-trib'ut-ed	in-hab'it-ed	Pol-i-ti'cians	smoul'dered
do-na'tions	in-qui'ry	prej'u-dice	un-sus-pect'ing

Notes and Meanings.

1 Smouldered, burned slowly.

2 Donations, gift.

3 Fort-William, in the south-west of Inverness-shire, near the foot of Ben Nevis.

4 Inveraray, the chief town of Argyshire, near the head of Loch Fyne.

5 The Master of Stair, eldest son and heir of Viscount Stair. He was appointed Secretary of State for Scotland in 1691, and succeeded his father in 1695. Queen Anne made him a Privy Councillor, and created him Earl of Stair in 1703.

7 Atrocious, very cruel.

8 Extirpate, root out.

Perpetrators, doers of the deed.

9 Prejudice, injury.

Contradictory, opposite;
ing. conflict.

Questions:—1. Why were many Highland chieftains friendly to the Stewart cause? 2. How did William try to gain their favour? What were "hedging politics"? 3. What decisive step did William take? 4. Who failed to take the oath in time? 5. What did he find on reaching Fort-William? 6. Who induced William to sign the warrant? Who undertook the execution? 7. When did the massacre take place? How many fell? 8. Who were to blame? What excuse was made for William? 9. What effect had it on his government?

35. GLENCOE.

1. "O tell me, Harper, wherefore flow
Thy wayward notes of wail and woe
Far down the desert of Glencoe,
Where none may list their melody?
Say, harp'st thou to the mists that fly,
Or to the dun deer glancing by,
Or to the eagle that from high
Screams chorus to thy minstrelsy?"—
2. "No, not to these, for they have rest,—
The mist-wreath has the mountain-crest,
The stag his lair, the erne her nest,
Abode of lone security.
But those for whom I pour the lay,
Not wild-wood deep, nor mountain gray.
Not this deep dell that shrouds from day,
Could screen from treacherous cruelty.
3. "Their flag was furled and mute their drum,
The very household dogs were dumb,
Unwont to bay at guests that come
In guise of hospitality.
His blithest notes the piper plied,
Her gayest snood the maiden tied,
The dame her distaff flung aside,
To tend her kindly housewifery.
4. "The hand that mingled in the meal,
At midnight drew the felon steel,
And gave the host's kind breast to feel
Meed for his hospitality!

The friendly hearth which warmed that hand,
At midnight armed it with the brand
That bade destruction's flames expand
Their red and fearful blazonry.

5. "Then woman's shriek was heard in vain;
Nor infancy's unpitied plain,
More than the warrior's groan, could gain
Respite from ruthless butchery!
The winter wind that whistled shrill,
The snows that night that cloaked the hill,
Though wild and pitiless, had still
Far more than Southern clemency.
6. "Long have my harp's best notes been gone,
Few are its strings, and faint their tone;
They can but sound in desert lone
Their gray-haired master's misery.
Were each gray hair a minstrel string,
Each chord should imprecations fling,
Till startled Scotland loud should ring
'Revenge for blood and treachery!'"

SIR WALTER SCOTT.

New Words in this Lesson.

bla'zon-ry	dis'taff	in'fan-cy	res'pite
chord	guise	mel'o-dy	ruth'less
cho'rus	house'wife-ry	min'stel-sy	treach'er-y
clem'en-cy	im-pre-ca'tions	pit'i-less	un-pit'ied

Notes and Meanings.

1 List, listen to.	Housewifery, pronounce <i>hus'ifry</i> .
2 No, etc. Here the Harper's answer begins.	4 Blazonry, devices, as on coats of arms.
Erne, eagle.	5 Plain, complaint.
3 Their flag was furled, token of peace.	6 Imprecations, curses.
Snood, a band or fillet for the hair.	Treachery, faithlessness; false friendship.

36. FOREIGN POLICY.

1. Aim of William's Policy.—To humble Louis the Fourteenth of France was the great object of William's foreign policy.

Louis was the most powerful Roman Catholic Sovereign in Europe. William had long been looked on as the great 1692 Captain of the Protestant armies. Louis, grasping gladly at the dethronement of James as a cause of war, prepared for a mighty invasion of England; but, in an action off La Hogue with the ships of England and Holland, his fleet was so shattered that all his plans were defeated.

2. **Continental War.**—In spite of his delicate health, William spent summer after summer on the Continent, engaged in hostilities with Louis, whom, though he could not humble, he kept in constant check,—a matter of the utmost importance to all Europe. The chief battles of this Continental War were Steenkirk (1692); Neerwinden (1693),—in both of which William gained honour, though forced to retreat; and the great siege of Namur (1695), which ended in the capitulation of the French. The Treaty of Ryswick in 1697 brought the war to a close. Louis gave up most of his conquests, and acknowledged William as King of Great Britain and Ireland. This was the death-blow to the hopes of James.

3. **The National Debt.**—Out of these expensive wars sprang the National Debt, which has since swelled to a sum so enormous. The Parliament, knowing that the chief value of the English crown in William's eyes was the increased weight it gave him in Continental politics, agreed to furnish large supplies of money for his wars with Louis, on condition that he should give up to the Commons the chief share in the domestic government. Though at first unwilling, he soon yielded to the arrangement with a grace which proved his good sense. The influence thus acquired by the Commons has never since been lost.

4. **The Bank of England.**—One of the schemes devised to meet the extraordinary expense of these foreign wars led to the establishment of the Bank of England. A body of merchants agreed to lend the Government £1,200,000 at 8 per cent., in return for certain trading privileges. The scheme originated with a Scotsman named William Paterson. It was 1694 violently opposed in Parliament, but was carried in the end. The charter was granted 27th July 1694.

5. **Death of Mary.**—In the same year was passed the Bill for Triennial Parliaments, which made the House of Commons

more directly dependent on the country, and less under the influence of the Crown. In the last week of the year Queen Mary died of small-pox, and thenceforth William ruled alone.

6. **Freedom of the Press.**—About this time a great and valuable reform was silently effected. The Act to restrain unlicensed printing was passed from year to year. It was passed in 1693 for the last time. When the time for its renewal arrived, the Commons declined to renew it, and it was allowed to expire (1694). This established the freedom of the Press.

7. **Trials for Treason.**—An important Act for regulating trials for treason was passed in 1696. It provided that the accused should be furnished with a copy of their indictment, and should be allowed the aid of counsel; and that the prosecution should be begun within three years of the alleged treason.

New Words in this Lesson.

ca-pit-u-la'tion	de-throne-ment	o-rig-in-at-ed	re-new-al
del-i-cate	ex-pens-ive	pros-e-cu-tion	Tri-en-ni-al
de-pend-ent	in-dict-ment	reg-u-lat-ing	un-li-censed

Notes and Meanings.

1 La Hogue, a cape on the north-west of France.	Namur, south-east of Brussels.
2 Steenkirk, between Brussels and Mons.	Capitulation, surrender; yielding.
Neerwinden, 2 miles from Landen (north-west of Liège), in Belgium.	Ryswick, a village of Holland, 2 miles south-east of the Hague.
The battle is sometimes called that of Landen.	3 Domestic, home.
	5 Triennial, lasting three years.
	7 Indictment, written accusation.
	Prosecution, trial.

Questions:—1. What was the great object of William's foreign policy? 2. What were the chief battles of the Continental War? What treaty closed it? 3. How did the National Debt originate? Whose power was thus increased? 4. What was the origin of the Bank of England? 5. What Bill was passed in 1694? Who died in that year? 6. How was the freedom of the press established? 7. What did the Trials for Treason Act provide?

37. THE DARIEN SCHEME.

1. **The Darien Company.**—During the greater part of William's reign the Scots complained bitterly of the way in which the English Parliament hampered Scottish trade. As

one means of pacifying Scotland, the King's Commissioner to the Parliament offered to promote emigration. William 1695 Pateron, the founder of the Bank of England, fixed on the Isthmus of Darien as the most suitable site for a colony, in the belief that it would open a trade with India toward the west. He took no rest until he had induced his countrymen (the Scots) to embark in the undertaking a sum of £400,000—to them, and for that age, a very large sum of money.

2. **The first Expedition.**—In July 1698, three stout ships, carrying twelve hundred men,—three hundred of them 1698 gentlemen by birth,—sailed from the port of Leith, amid the cheers and the weeping of a great multitude. In about three months they reached the shore of Central America, and called the country "New Caledonia." All around, the colonists found fields of pine-apples and golden maize, which proved the fertility of the soil. Their hearts were very joyful, as they set about building a fortress with planks of rosewood and sandal-wood, which they called "Fort St. Andrew."

3. **Misfortune.**—But the joy lasted only a short time. In spite of the friendship of the Indians, signs of misfortune began to show themselves. Their first evils arose from disunion within their own fortress; then came the annoyance of finding the stock of provisions which they had brought from Scotland growing mouldy and unfit for use. The rain began to fall, and the fair shore was suddenly changed into an unhealthy swamp.

4. They heard rumours that the Spaniards were preparing to attack them; and they also heard a very cruel piece of news, to the effect that the English Government had sent out orders to Jamaica, Barbadoes, and New York, desiring the English settlers in these places to give the Scottish colony of Darien no help, in arms, ammunition, or any other thing.

5. **Suspense.**—They looked eagerly every daybreak over the sea for the vessels which they expected from home with food and succour. None came. At last a sail appeared; but when it touched the shore it was found to be only a vessel which they had sent to Jamaica—come back empty. Those of them that were left fled at length from the place of graves, to find, in

spite of the Government order, a little charity at New York and Jamaica.

6. **The second Expedition.**—Another expedition reached Darien, to find the site of the fortress of St. Andrew overgrown with huge leaves and briars, among which snakes were crawling. For a time a brave soldier named Campbell endeavoured to restore the settlement. But one day after his return from the Pacific side, where he had succeeded in taking a Spanish fortress, he saw from the ridge of a hilly range twenty-five Spanish ships blocking up the harbour.

7. **Disaster.**—For six weeks the colonists held out; but when they had melted all their pewter plates and cups into balls, and had eaten almost the last scraps of food in the fortress, they yielded to superior force. Thus perished a Scottish colony, which, with a little fostering care from England, might have risen to be the capital of the New World.

8. **Causes and Effects of the Failure.**—There is no doubt that the failure of this promising scheme was due to the jealousy of the English and Dutch trading companies, which induced William to withhold from the Scottish colony the privileges he had promised. To the jealousy of the English merchants also, the Scots ascribed their exclusion from the East Indian trade. The feeling of animosity thus excited between the two nations was so keen that it threatened to plunge them into war. William, who was wise and far-seeing, was convinced that nothing could prevent the severance of the two countries but a complete legislative union.

New Words in this Lesson.

an-i-mos'i-ty	col-on-ists	leg-is-lāt-ive	sev'er-ance
an-noy'-ance	dis-as'-ter	pac'-i-fy-ing	suc'-cour
a-scribed'	fer-til'i-ty	pew'-ter	suit'-a-ble
char-i-ty	Isth'-mus	san'-dal-wood	sus-pense'

Notes and Meanings.

- 1 Isthmus of Darien, connecting Central with South America. [land.]
- 2 New Caledonia, that is, New Scotland.
- 3 Annoyance, trouble; vexation.
- 4 Jamaica, Barbadoes, West India Islands belonging to England—Jamaica in the Greater Antilles, Barbadoes in the Lesser.

5 Suspense, uncertainty.

Succour, help.

7 Disaster, ill-fortune; calamity.

8 Animosity, hatred.

Legislative union, union of the
Parliaments, or legislating bodies.

Questions:—1. What was the origin of the Darien Company? 2. When did the first expedition set out? What did the colonists call their fortress? 3. What evils afflicted the colony? 4. What cruel piece of news reached the settlers? 5. For what did they eagerly look? 6. What did the second expedition find? By what was it blockaded? 7. How long did it hold out? 8. What were the causes of the failure? What were its effects?

38. THE SPANISH CROWN.

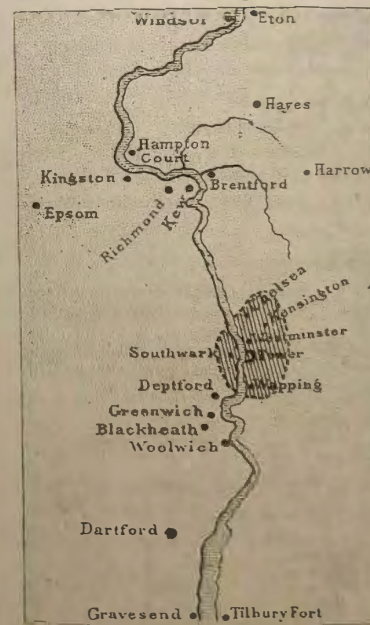
1. **First English Ministry.**—William's second Parliament was dissolved in July 1698; and in the new Parliament, 1698 which met in August, the Whigs regained the supremacy. Lord Somers was Lord Chancellor, Charles Montagu (afterwards Earl of Halifax) First Lord of the Treasury. This was the first regular English Ministry; for it was at this time that it became customary to choose the ministers in a body, called the Ministry, or the Cabinet, from that party which had the majority in the House of Commons.

2. **The Civil List.**—This Parliament offended William by insisting on the reduction of the army to 10,000 men. The King wished to retain his Dutch Guards, but even that was refused. At the same time the power of the Parliament was increased by a change made in the Civil List—the annual grant for the support of the royal household and the personal expenses of the Sovereign. A sum of £700,000 a year was settled on the King, while the remainder of the revenue was left in the hands of the Commons, to support the army and navy, and to defray the cost of government.

3. **The Spanish Succession.**—The position of the Spanish Crown at this time caused anxiety in Europe, as the King, Charles the Second, was childless, and was believed to be dying. Louis of France and the Emperor Leopold each claimed it for his son. William, who wished to prevent a union of France and Spain, favoured the claim of Ferdinand, Prince of Bavaria; but in 1699 the Prince died. William then agreed to a partition of the Spanish dominions between the Dauphin and the Emperor's son Charles, the latter receiving the crown.

4. Charles of Spain was indignant when he heard how his dominions were being disposed of, and made a will bequeathing his crown and all his possessions to Philip of 1700 Anjou, the second son of the Dauphin. Charles the Second died in October, and the Duke of Anjou became Philip the Fifth of Spain.

5. The Emperor Leopold prepared to vindicate the claims of his son. He took up arms against the French in Italy, and the War of the Spanish Succession began. The 1701 Dutch also entered into the struggle, and claimed the aid of England. But the aspect of affairs in England had changed. In the end of 1700, the Tories, under the Earl of Rochester, came into power, and in the new Parliament they had a majority.



6. **The Act of Settlement.**—This Parliament passed one great measure—the Act of Settlement, rendered necessary by the death of the 1701 young Duke of Gloucester, only son of the Princess Anne. The Act ordained that after Anne, the succession should pass to the Princess Sophia of Hanover, and her heirs, being Protestants of the Church of England.

7. **The Grand Alliance.**—William had acquiesced in the settlement of the Spanish throne without approving it, and he now determined to join the Emperor. In September,

he concluded with Germany and Holland a treaty known as the Grand Alliance, and bent all his energies in preparation for a gigantic struggle. In the very midst of his preparations, and

2. War of the Spanish Succession.—War was formally declared in May. The principal incident of the first campaign was the capture of L. by Marlborough. On his return to England, he received the thanks of the House of Commons, and the Queen made him a Duke. In the following year, the Emperor proclaimed his second son King of Spain, with the title of Charles the Third (1703).

3. Blenheim.—In 1704 Marlborough gained a brilliant victory over the French and the Bavarians at Blenheim, on the north bank of the Danube. Prince Eugene of Savoy commanded the right of the allies. Marshal Tallard, the French general, was taken prisoner. Marlborough received a gift of the royal manor of Woodstock, and of a splendid mansion built on it called Blenheim House.

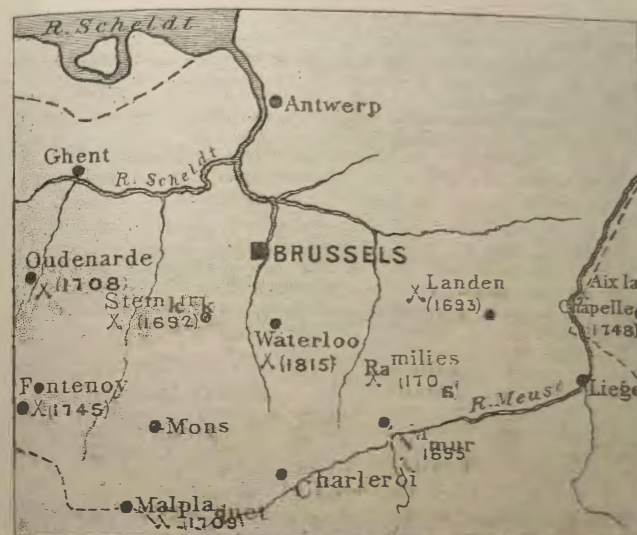
4. Gibraltar.—The same year witnessed one of the most important achievements of the war—the capture of Gibraltar by Admiral Rooke and Sir Cloudesley Shovel. Aided by a body of Hessian troops, the British, landing on the isthmus which joins the Rock to the mainland, carried the works by storm in spite of a heavy fire.



5. Whigs and Tories.

—As the reign advanced, and the war continued, the strife between Whigs and Tories raged more fiercely than ever. The Whigs supported the war; the Tories sought for peace. The strength of the Tories lay in the House of Commons, that of the Whigs in the House of Lords. There was thus mixed up with the party warfare a struggle for supremacy between the two Houses of Parliament. In 1704, Marlborough obtained the appointment of Robert Harley and Henry St. John, moderate Tories, who supported his war policy. Though at heart a Tory, Marlborough was so disgusted with the Tory opposition to the war that he was forced to drift with the Whigs.

6. Ramillies, Oudenarde, and Malplaquet.—No new event of importance happened till 1706, when Marlborough defeated the French under Marshal Villeroi at Ramillies. The tide of fortune had now turned against the French.



in all quarters. In 1707, indeed, the victory of the Duke of Berwick at Almanza virtually secured Spain for Philip the Fifth; but in 1708, Marlborough gained a splendid victory over Marshal Vendome at Oudenarde, when the French lost fifteen thousand men and more than one hundred banners. The last great event of the war was Marlborough's victory over Marshal Villars at Malplaquet in 1709, when the victors lost twenty-four thousand men, and the vanquished only half that number. The war lingered on till 1713, when the Peace of Utrecht brought it to Europe.

New Words in this Lesson.

a-chie e-men s
as-cend'an

in-ter-course
man-or

man-sion
nom-in-at-ed

vir-al-ly
war-are

Notes and Meanings.

- 1 Intercourse, meetings; friendship. Ceremony, formality of address. In the ascendant, supreme.
- 2 Liège, in Belgium, on the Meuse, south-east of Brussels.
- 3 Blenheim, north-west of Augsburg. Woodstock, north-west of Oxford.
- 4 Achievements, exploits; successes. The Rock. Gibraltar is a strong rock-fortress in the south of Spain, near the strait of the same name.
- 5 Robert Harley. He had been chosen Speaker of the House of Commons by the Tories in February 1701, and again in the new Parliament which met in December. He became Earl of Oxford in 1711.
- St. John. Pronounced *Sin'jun*. He was afterwards Viscount Bolingbroke.
- 6 Ramillies (*Ra-meel'-ye*), south-east of Louvain, in Belgium.
- Oudenarde (*Oo-den-ar'-day*), south-west of Ghent, in Belgium.
- Malplaquet (*Mal-pla-kay*), in the north of France, near the Belgian frontier.
- Vanquished, defeated.
- Utrecht, in Holland; south-east of Amsterdam.

Questions.—1. Who had great influence with Queen Anne? From which party did she choose her Ministers? 2. When was war declared against Spain? 3. What great victory did Marlborough gain in 1704? 4. What stronghold was taken by the British in the same year? 5. What was mixed up with the warfare of Whigs and Tories? 6. What were Marlborough's other victories?

40. THE BATTLE OF BLENHEIM.

1. It was a summer evening,
Old Kaspar's work was done,
And he before his cottage-door
Was sitting in the sun;
And by him sported on the green
His little grandchild Wilhelmine.

She saw her brother Peterkin
Roll something large and round
Which he beside the rivulet,
In playing there, had found;
He came to ask what he had found,
That was so large, and smooth, and round.

2. Old Kaspar took it from the boy,
Who stood expectant by;
And then the old man shook his head,
And with a natural sigh,
"Tis some poor fellow's skull," said he,
"Who fell in the great victory.

"I find them in the garden,
For there's many here about;
And often, when I go to plough,
The ploughshare turns them out!
For many thousand men," said he,
"Were slain in that great victory."—

3. "Now tell us what 'twas all about,"
Young Peterkin he cries;
While little Wilhelmine looks up
With wonder-waiting eyes;
"Now tell us all about the war,
And what they killed each other for."—

"It was the English," Kaspar cried,
"Who put the French to rout;
But what they killed each other for,
I could not well make out.
But everybody said," quoth he,
"That 'twas a famous victory.

4. "My father lived at Blenheim then,
Yon little stream hard by:
They burned his dwelling to the ground,
And he was forced to fly;
So with his wife and child he fled,
Nor had he where to rest his head.

"With fire and sword the country round
Was wasted far and wide;
And many a tender mother then,
And new-born baby, died:
But things like that, you know, must be
At every famous victory.

5. "They say it was a shocking sight
After the field was won;
For many thousand bodies there
Lay rotting in the sun:
But things like that, you know, must be
After a famous victory.

"Great praise the Duke of Marlbro' won,
And our good Prince Eugene."—
"Why, 'twas a very wicked thing!"
aid little Wilhelmine.—
"Ay, nay, my little girl," quoth he,
"It was a famous victory:



DUKE OF MARLBOROUGH.

6. "And everybody praised the Duke,
Who this great fight did win."—
"But what good came of it at last?"
Quoth little Peterkin.—
"Why, that I cannot tell," said he;
"But 'twas a famous victory."

ROBERT SOUTHEY.

Notes and Meanings.

1 Old Kaspar, a Bavarian whose father had lived near the battlefield, and had had his house burned down by the English.
Rivulet, little stream.

2 Expectant, waiting for an answer.
Natural, produced without effort; voluntary.
5 Shocking, terrible; disgusting.
Prince Eugene (Oo-zhain'), Francis

Eugene, Prince of Savoy, one of the greatest generals of modern times. He was a Frenchman by birth. His family having been expelled from France by Louis XIV., he went to Vienna and entered the service of the Emperor against the Turks. He died in 1736, aged seventy-three.

41. THE UNION OF THE PARLIAMENTS.

1. **Danger of War.**—A Union of the Parliaments of England and Scotland had been a favourite project of the Whigs ever since the Revolution.

William had strongly approved it, and it had been referred to in Queen Anne's first speech from the throne. The English Government now saw that if a union were not speedily effected, the two countries would certainly drift into war. The Scottish Parliament was still smarting under the disasters at Darien. A Bill in favour of the Hanoverian Succession had been introduced in the Scottish Parliament in

1704; but it had been rejected with much scorn.

2. **The Act of Security.**—An Act of Security was then passed, providing that, if Anne died childless, the Scottish Estates should choose a successor of the royal line and the Protestant religion; but that the same sovereign should not rule over Scotland and England, unless the independence of Scotland and the commercial equality of the two countries were secured.

3. **Scottish Trade.**—Shortly afterwards the English Parliament placed restrictions on Scottish trade: reprisals took place. On suspicion of having robbed a certain Scottish ship which was missing, the crew of an English ship driven



QUEEN ANNE.

into the Firth of Forth were tried, and the captain, the mate, and the gunner were hanged. The ill feeling between the two countries grew stronger than ever, and it became evident to the English Government that an incorporating union was essential to the maintenance of peace.

4. **The Joint-Commission.**—In April 1706, a Joint-Commission, consisting of thirty-one members from each country, and having Daniel Defoe as its secretary, met at Westminster to draw up Articles of Union. They completed their work in July. In October the last Scottish Parliament met in Edinburgh to discuss the Articles. The Duke of Queensberry, the chief promoter of the Union, was the Royal Commissioner. The leader of the opposition was the Duke of Hamilton, whose royal blood was perhaps excited by hopes of the crown.

5. **Excitement in Scotland.**—The Union was disliked by the majority of the Scottish people. During the sitting of the Parliament, there was great excitement in Edinburgh and all over the country. All work and business were at a standstill. Eager and anxious crowds thronged the neighbourhood of the Parliament House. Wild cheers or deep groans gave expression to their feelings, as the progress of the debate was reported to them. Strong bodies of troops were in readiness to put down rioting if the peace should be broken.

6. **The Union Ratified.**—The Parliament was about equally divided on the subject; but English gold freely distributed secured majorities sufficient to carry the measure. The Treaty of Union was ratified by the Scottish Parliament on January 16th, 1707. It received the Queen's assent on March 4th, and the Union took effect on May 1st.

7. **Its Terms.**—The chief terms of the Union were :—

a. That the Electress Sophia of Hanover, and her heirs, if Protestants, should succeed to the crown of the United Kingdom of Great Britain.

b. That England and Scotland should be governed by one Parliament sitting in London, in which Scotland should be represented by sixteen elective Peers and forty-five members of the Commons.

c. That all English ports and colonies should be opened to Scottish traders.

d. That while the laws of public policy should be the same for both countries, those relating to property and private rights should be preserved unaltered, except for the good of the Scottish people.

e. That the Court of Session and other Scottish tribunals should remain unchanged.

f. That the Church of Scotland should be maintained, as already by law established.

8. **The "Equivalent Money."**—The first united Parliament of Great Britain, which met in London on October 23rd, 1707, passed several Acts for the purpose of making the Union more complete. By one of these the Scottish Privy Council was dissolved; by another, the election of the sixteen Scottish Peers was regulated; by a third, provision was made for the payment of the "equivalent money"—a sum of £398,000 voted as compensation for the depreciation of the Scottish coinage, but very generally regarded as a bribe. As the Scots refused to take the money in English paper, it was sent to Edinburgh in specie. According to the account of Defoe, who was then in Edinburgh, the waggons bearing it had to be guarded by dragoons to ward off the attacks of the mob, who looked on the gold as the price for which the independence of their country had been bartered.

9. **Effects of the Union.**—Though the measure was very unpopular at the time of its passing, there can be no doubt that both countries, and Scotland especially, have reaped from it very great benefits. From that event Scotland must date the great material prosperity which she now enjoys. The strong objections urged at first against the change, were the loss of independence and the increased load of taxation; but these were only seeming evils. The commerce, the wealth, and the greatness of Scotland began to advance with rapid strides. Fishing villages became thriving sea-ports; Glasgow and Dundee sprang into great and populous cities.

10. **The Pretender.**—Louis the Fourteenth of France, taking advantage of the discontent excited in Scotland by the Union, despatched a fleet from Dunkirk to set James "the Pretender" on the Scottish throne. But timely notice

Mar.
1708

reached England; and the French admiral, finding the Firth of Forth guarded by a squadron under Sir George Byng, returned with the loss of one ship.

New Words in this Lesson.

coin'age	E-lect'ress	main'ten-ance	reg'u-lāt-ed
com-mer'cial	e-qual'i-ty	ob-jec'tions	re-pris'als
com-pen-sa'tion	es-sen'tial	pop'u-lous	re-strict'ions
de-prē-qi-a'tion	ex-pres'sion	proj'ect	spe'cie
e-lect'ive	in-cor-po-rāt-ing	read'i-ness	suf-fi'cient

Notes and Meanings.

- 1 Project, scheme.
- 3 Restrictions on Scottish trade, import duties on Scottish goods sent into England.
- Reprisals took place. The Scots retaliated by taxing English goods and by attacking English vessels.
- Incorporating Union, making the two governments one corporation.
- 4 Daniel Defoe, the author of "Robinson Crusoe." Born 1663. He was therefore at this time 43 years of age. "Robinson Crusoe" did not appear till 1719. Died 1731.
- Royal blood. Mary Stewart, daughter of James II. of Scotland, married James, Lord Hamilton; and from the union sprang the noble Houses of Hamilton, Argyle, and Lennox.
- 7 Electress Sophia, grand-daughter of James I.
- Elective Peers, peers elected by their fellow-peers.
- Forty-five members, increased to 53 in 1832, to 60 in 1868, and to 72 in 1885.
- Tribunals, courts of justice.
- 8 Depreciation, lowering in value.
- In specie, in coin; opposed to paper money.
- Bartered, exchanged; sold.

Questions.—1. What forced the question of Union on the English Government? What Bill was introduced in the Scottish Parliament? 2. What did the Act of Security provide? 3. How was trade affected? 4. When and where did the Joint-Commission meet? Who promoted the Union in Scotland? Who opposed it? 5. How was the Union regarded in Scotland? 6. How were majorities secured for it? 7. What were its chief terms? 8. What was the "equivalent money"? Why did the Scots dislike it? 9. What were the effects of the Union? 10. How did the French King try to take advantage of the discontent?

42. ASCENDENCY OF THE COMMONS.

1. Mrs. Masham and Harley.—While the Union Parliament was sitting, a change took place in the Ministry. Mrs. Masham, a relative of Harley, had begun to supplant the Duchess of Marlborough in Anne's favour. Through her, Harley intrigued for the expulsion of the Whigs from office. In

retaliation, the Whigs insisted on Harley's dismissal from the Ministry. With Harley, St. John resigned; and they then united in denouncing Marlborough and the war. 1708 Robert Walpole took Harley's place as Secretary at War.

2. Sacheverell's Trial.—The Ministry, by its indiscretion, brought about its own fall. Dr. Henry Sacheverell, rector of St. Saviour's, Southwark, had preached two 1709 sermons in which he denounced the Revolution as an unrighteous change, and called on the people to defend their Church. The Government resolved on his impeachment, and the case came before the Lords. The trial lasted three weeks. Sacheverell was found guilty, and was forbidden 1710 to preach for three years (February).

3. Fall of the Whigs.—So mild a punishment, inflicted by a Whig House of Lords, was regarded as a triumph for the Tories. Before the end of the year Godolphin and Sunderland were dismissed (August). Harley and St. John came into office; and in the new Parliament, which met in November, the Tory Ministry had a decided majority. One of its first measures was to pass an Act against Occasional Conformity, by which it was made unlawful for any one who had received a public appointment and had taken the Test Oath to attend a place of worship not of the Established Church.

4. Fall of Marlborough.—Early in the following year, Harley was made Lord Treasurer and Earl of Oxford; but his advancement roused the jealousy of his friend St. John, who began to intrigue against him. During Marlborough's absence on the Continent, the Ministry opened negotiations for 1711 peace with the French Government. Marlborough returned in October, to find himself ruined, and his wife's influence with the Queen entirely gone. Charged with dishonest practices in connection with Government contracts, the Duke was dismissed in disgrace from all his offices. Walpole was at the same time expelled from the House of Commons for taking a bribe when Secretary at War.

5. Creation of Peers.—The peace project was denounced by the majority of the House of Lords, led by Marlborough. 1712 To neutralize this opposition, Oxford required the Queen to create twelve new Peers, and thus obtained a majority.

This step marks an era in the history of Parliamentary government. It was a perfectly constitutional plan, whereby the Ministry for the time being, having the confidence of the majority of the Commons, could at once alter the relation of parties in the House of Lords. Thus the ascendancy of the Commons was established. Since that event the greatest Ministers have been Commoners.

6. **The Treaty of Utrecht.**—Marlborough, deeming further resistance useless, retired first to Blenheim, then to the Continent, where he was received with princely honours. The

Treaty of Utrecht was signed on the last day of March 1713. It abandoned the cause for which the war had been undertaken—the exclusion of the Bourbons from Spain. It was, however, provided that the French and Spanish crowns should never be united. Louis recognized the Protestant succession in England, and agreed to expel the Pretender from France. England retained Gibraltar, Minorca, and her conquests in North America.

7. **Bolingbroke's Intrigues.**—The treaty was a triumph for the Tories; but the victory was short-lived. When the terms of the treaty became known in England, it was deemed a poor return for Marlborough's successes. St. John (now Viscount Bolingbroke) was known to be favourable to the Pretender, and this destroyed the credit of the whole Tory party. He had long been Oxford's secret enemy, and he now drove him from office.

8. **Death of Anne.**—Everything was in train for a Jacobite rising, when the Queen was suddenly struck down with 1714 apoplexy (July 29). The Jacobites were taken by surprise. Anne was induced, by moderate men of both parties, to intrust the conduct of affairs to the Duke of Shrewsbury, a Tory, but a Hanoverian. She died the next day (August 1).

9. **Her Character.**—Anne was a woman of little talent and less learning; simple and homely in all her tastes and habits. Her natural kindness of heart gained for her the title of "The Good Queen Anne." The loss of all her children—most of them in infancy—saddened her life; and she spent the last year of her reign as a mourning and childless widow,

New Words in this Lesson.

ad-vance-ment	con-tracts	in-dis-crétion	rec-tor
as-cend-en-cy	cre-a-tion	neu-tral-ize	re-tal-i-a-tion
con-fi-dence	de-nounç-ing	oc-ca-sion-al	sup-plant'
con-form-i-ty	dis-hon-est	rec-og-nized	un-right-eous

Notes and Meanings.

- 1 Supplant, undermine; displace. Denouncing, condemning. Robert Walpole. Prime Minister from 1715 till 1717, and again from 1721 till 1742; then made Earl of Orford. Died 1745.
- 2 Indiscretion, want of wisdom. Sacheverell. Pronounced *Sashev'-erell*.
- 4 Marlborough retired to the Continent. He returned to England on the death of Queen Anne. He was coldly received at Court, but was restored to his post as Captain-General. He died in 1722.
- 5 Neutralize, make of no effect. An era, etc. For example, in 1831, when the Reform Bill which the Commons had passed was opposed by the Lords, Earl Grey threatened a creation of Liberal peers. The Lords gave way; one hundred Tory peers absented themselves from the division, and the Bill was allowed to pass.
- 7 The Pretender, the son of James II.

Questions.—1. What led to Harley's dismissal from the Ministry? Who took his place? 2. For what was Sacheverell tried? 3. What effect had the trial on the Ministry? 4. What disgraced Marlborough? 5. How did Oxford obtain a majority in the House of Lords? 6. What was the drift of the Treaty of Utrecht? 7. What was the result of Bolingbroke's intrigues? 8. What did Queen Anne's death probably prevent? Who was made Prime Minister the previous day? 9. What was Anne's character?

HOUSE OF HANOVER.

Since 1714 A.D.

GEORGE I.

Born 1660 A.D.—Great-grandson of James I.—Married Sophia of Brunswick—Reigned 1714-1727 A.D.

SUMMARY OF THE REIGN.

1714. Union of the Crowns of Great Britain and Hanover—Halifax Prime Minister; Townshend, Stanhope, and Walpole in the Ministry.
1715. The Whigs have a majority in the new Parliament—Impeachment of Oxford, Bolingbroke, and Ormond—Oxford is sent to the Tower—Bolingbroke and Ormond flee to France—Great riots—Halifax dies: Walpole Prime Minister—Jacobite rebellion—surrender of Forster at Preston—Repulse of Mar at Sheriffmuir—Arrival of the Pretender.

1716. The Pretender and Mar sail to France—The *Septennial Act* passed—Townshend is dismissed; becomes Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland.
 1717. Walpole resigns; Stanhope Prime Minister.
 1718. Sunderland Prime Minister—*Quadruple Alliance* (Germany, Eng^e and France, and Holland) against Spain.
 1720. The South Sea Scheme leads to speculation and general ruin—Walpole restores the public credit.
 1721. Sunderland resigns, and Aislabie is expelled from Parliament—Walpole Prime Minister.
 1722. Bishop of Ely expelled for forming a Jacobite plot.
 1723. Opposition to Wood's halfpence in Ireland: they are withdrawn.
 1727. Death of George I.

43. THE 'FIFTEEN.

1. **Halifax Prime Minister.**—The Elector of Hanover was at once proclaimed King, with the title of George the First. He was fifty-four years of age. As he was imperfectly acquainted with the English language, he left the government entirely in the hands of the Ministry, which therefore acquired more power than it had ever had before. The Tory Ministry was dismissed. Montagu, now Earl of Halifax, was made First Lord of the Treasury; but the real head of the Government was Charles, Viscount Townshend, Secretary of State.

2. **Walpole Prime Minister.**—Oxford and Bolingbroke, against whom there were strong suspicions of a secret correspondence with the Pretender, were impeached for high treason. Oxford was sent to the Tower; Bolingbroke fled to the Continent, and joined the councils of the Pretender. In consequence of riots of Whig and Tory nobles in several towns, the Riot Act, which had been passed in 1549, was reënacted and made permanent. The army and the navy were made ready for war, in case the Jacobites should attempt a rising. Lord Halifax died in May, and Walpole became Prime Minister in October.

3. **The Rebellion.**—The alarm of the King and his ministers was not groundless. In defiance of the Treaty of Utrecht, the Pretender was in France, busily engaged in preparing for a descent on Scotland with the help of Louis the Fourteenth. The death of Louis, in the midst of these preparations, was a fatal blow to the prospects of the Pretender, for it was evident that the French Government would have enough to do in repairing

the shattered resources of the country. But it was too late to draw back. Within a few days after the death of Louis, the flame of rebellion was actually kindled both in Scotland and in England.

The Earl of Mar had gathered ten thousand clansmen around him at Braemar, and held all the Highlands for James; while the Duke of Argyle, with a Royalist army, strongly posted at Stirling, watched all his movements. The 1715 Jacobite army of Northumberland had been called to arms by the Earl of Derwentwater and Mr. Forster, the Member for the county; but few of them had obeyed the summons. They were aided by eighteen hundred Highlanders, sent them by Mar, and were joined by a few lords of the Scottish Border.

4. **Preston and Sheriffmuir.**—The Royalist troops, forcing Forster into the town of Preston in Lancashire, there compelled him to surrender. On the same day, at Nov. 13, Sheriffmuir in Perthshire, Argyle inflicted, not an absolute defeat, but a severe check upon Mar, who after the engagement retreated hastily to Perth.

6. **The Pretender in Scotland.**—The Pretender, who was called on the Continent the Chevalier de St. George, resolved to see what his own presence in Scotland would do. He landed at Peterhead; but with no money, no troops, Dec. 22. he was a failure. He found his party broken and dispirited; and his arrival without the aid from France which had been so eagerly looked for, cast a deeper gloom over the Stuart cause.

7. **At Perth.**—The Pretender frivolously wasted many days in preparing for his coronation, while the crown was yet to be won. Amid his dreams of a splendour never to be realized, Feb. 6. he heard that Argyle was advancing; and he retreated northward to Montrose, where he and Mar embarked for France, leaving the army to its fate.

8. **The Sufferers.**—The Earl of Derwentwater, Lord Kenmure and about twenty others, suffered death; the estates of many were confiscated; and more than a thousand were banished to North America. Thus ended "The Fifteen." Its effect on political parties was to discredit the Tories and strengthen the Whig Government.

9. **The Septennial Act.**—Nevertheless the Whigs dreaded the consequences to which a general election might lead, in the excited state of the country. They therefore passed the Septennial Act, extending the possible duration of Parliaments to seven years. The Parliament then sitting had met on March 21, 1715, and was not dissolved till March 10, 1722.

New Words in this Lesson.

ac-quaint-ed	du-ra'tion	lan'-guage	re-en-act-ed
con-fis-cāt-ed	E-lect'or	per'ma-nent	re-sourc-es
dis-cred-it	im-per-fect-ly	re-al-ized	Sep-ten'-ni-al

Notes and Meanings.

- | | |
|--|--|
| <p>2 Pretender, one who lays claim to an office or title: in this case, James Stewart, the son of King James II., who claimed to be James III. of England and James VIII. of Scotland.</p> <p>4 Earl of Mar, John Erskine, known as "Bobbing John" from his frequent changes of party. He died at Aix-la-Chapelle in 1732.</p> | <p>Braemar, in the west of Aberdeenshire, on the river Dee.</p> <p>5 Sheriffmuir, north-east of Stirling.</p> <p>6 Peterhead, a sea-port on the coast of Aberdeenshire, north of Aberdeen.</p> <p>7 Frivolously, in a trifling and silly manner.</p> <p>Montrose, on the coast of Forfarshire.</p> <p>8 Confiscated, forfeited to the Crown.</p> <p>9 Septennial, lasting for seven years.</p> |
|--|--|

Questions:—1. How did the Ministry acquire more power under George I.? Who was Prime Minister? 2. What became of Oxford and Bolingbroke? Who succeeded Halifax as Prime Minister? 3. Where were preparations made for a descent on Scotland? 4. Who headed the rising in Scotland? Who in England? 5. Where did Forster surrender? Where was Mar checked? 6. When and where did the Pretender land? Why were his friends disappointed? 7. Where did he embark? 8. Who were punished for the rebellion? 9. What led to the passing of the Septennial Act?

44. THE SOUTH SEA SCHEME.

1. **Sunderland Prime Minister.**—For the sake of Hanover, George embroiled England with Continental affairs. In connection with his foreign policy several changes took place in the Ministry, and early in 1718 the Earl of Sunderland became Prime Minister. The Quadruple Alliance was then formed, by which Germany, England, France, and Holland leagued themselves against Philip of Spain. Admiral Byng destroyed the Spanish fleet off Sicily. In retaliation, Spain sent an expedition to invade Scotland in favour of

the Pretender; but the fleet was shattered by a storm, and only two ships reached the coast of Scotland. Soon afterwards Philip sought peace (1720).

2. **Object of the Scheme.**—About the same time the South Sea Scheme set all England crazy. The National Debt then amounted to £53,000,000. The Government was obliged to pay those who had lent the money interest at the rate 1720 of six per cent., which came to £3,180,000 in the year. To remove, or at least to lessen, this heavy burden, various schemes were proposed. That of the South Sea Company, which had been formed by Harley in 1710 for trading purposes, was accepted by the Government. In return for certain trading privileges, the Company undertook to pay Government annuities amounting to £800,000 a year, and gave the Government seven and a half million sterling besides.

3. **Its Success.**—The Company proposed to pay off the annuitants in South Sea stock, tempting them with extravagant promises of interest. Stories of the treasure to be drawn from golden islands in the Pacific found eager listeners. Hundreds rushed to the offices of the Company to exchange their Government stock for shares in the scheme. The Company promised a dividend of fifty per cent. at least, and the price of the shares rose rapidly, until £1,000 was offered for stock that had at first cost only £100.

4. **The Bubble Bursts.**—The most ridiculous joint-stock companies were started, in imitation of the great scheme. The proceedings of the South Sea directors against these rival companies excited the suspicion of their own shareholders, and suddenly the gigantic bubble burst. All ran to sell the South Sea stock; no one would buy. The offices were closed, and hundreds became ruined bankrupts.

5. **Walpole's Remedy.**—Sir Robert Walpole, who had all along cried out against the huge gambling transaction, now came forward to save the public credit. His plan was to divide the losses among the Bank of England, the East India Company, and the Government. For having accepted bribes from the directors, Lord Sunderland, the Prime Minister, was forced to resign; and Mr. Aislaby, the Chancellor of the Exchequer, was expelled from the House of

Common. The estates of the directors were sold to compensate the shareholders.

6. **Walpole again Prime Minister.**—Walpole the first time Prime Minister for the second time, and for twenty years he continued to direct the Government. Bribery was the secret of his long reign. He is credited with the saying, "Every man has his price." To some he gave titles of honour; to other places of profit or of power. His chief talent lay in finance. To his wise measure England owed great advances in her commerce and her manufactures.

7. **Atterbury's Plot.**—One of the first troubles with which Walpole had to deal was a Jacobite plot. Francis Atterbury, the rector of Bishop of Rochester and the friend of Sacheverell, intrigued for the return of the Pretender. When Walpole heard of the plot, he took active measures against the bishop. A Bill of Pains and Penalties passed through both Houses, sentencing him to deprivation and exile; and he spent the rest of his days in France.

8. **Wood's Halfpence.**—Ireland was then convulsed by a trifling question. A mine-proprietor, named Wood, having obtained a patent for supplying that country with copper 1724 coin, proceeded to send his coin across the Channel. It excited violent opposition, which was increased by the "Drapier Letters" of Dean Swift. The Government tried in vain to force Wood's halfpence into circulation; and in the end the patent had to be annulled, and Wood was compensated with a pension.

9. **Death of George.**—The death of George the First, who June 11, was seized with apoplexy while travelling in Hanover, 1727 shook the stability of the Walpole Administration; but Walpole found a true and staunch friend in the new Queen, Caroline of Anspach. Through her influence with her husband, the country was enabled to retain the services of the man best fitted to govern it.

10. **His Character.**—George the First was a thorough German in his character and habits,—heavy, cautious, and reserved. His government of England was marked by undue partiality to the Whigs, and by a tendency in every case to sacrifice British interests to those of Hanover.

New Words in this Lesson.

an-nu'i-tants	dep-ri-va'tion	im-i-ta'tion	quad'-ru-ple
an-nu'i-ties	di-rec'tors	man-u fac'tures	ri-dic'u-lous
brib'-er-y	div'i-dend	par-ti-a'l-ty	ta-bil'i-ty
cir-cu-la'tion	em-broiled'	pa'tent	tend'en-cy
com'pen-sat-ed	fin-ance'	pro-pri-e-tor	trans-ac'tion

Notes and Meanings.

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1 Embroiled, entangled.
Retaliation, revenge. | 5 Gambling, staking money on chance;
dishonest. |
| 2 Annuities, sums of money payable
yearly. [nuities. | Compensate, repay. |
| 3 Annuitants, those who receive an-
South Sea stock, shares in the South
Sea Company. | 7 Deprivation, loss of office. |
| Extravagant, excessive; too great. | 8 Annulled, cancelled; reduced to
9 Anspach, in Bavaria. [nothing.
10 Partiality, fondness.
Tendency, aptness; inclination. |

Questions:—1. What Ministry formed the Quadruple Alliance? What was its object? 2. What was the object of the South Sea scheme? What did the Company undertake to do? 3. What showed its success? 4. What led to the bursting of the bubble? 5. Who were punished for the failure? What was Walpole's plan? 6. How did he hold office so long? 7. Who made a new Jacobite plot? 8. To what disturbance did Wood's halfpence lead? 9. When did George I. die? 10. What was his character?

GEORGE II.

Born 1683 A.D.—Son of George I.—Married Caroline of Anspach—
Reigned 1727–1760 A.D.

SUMMARY OF THE REIGN.

1727. Walpole continues in power.
1728. A new Parliament, with a large Whig majority.
1733. Walpole introduces his *Excise Bill*, but withdraws it when opposed.
1736. An Edinburgh mob hangs Captain Porteous, who had been reprieved.
1737. Queen Caroline's death shakes Walpole's power—The Prince of Wales and the "Patriots" oppose Walpole.
1739. War with Spain about the right of search—The Wesleys found the body of Methodists.
1741. New Parliament: Walpole's party declining—Attack on Carteret.
1741–44. Commodore Anson makes a voyage round the world.
1742. Walpole resigns—Wilmington Prime Minister, but Carteret the real head of the Ministry.
1743. England joins in the War of the Austrian Succession—George II. defeats the French at Dettingen—Death of Wilmington: Pelham Prime Minister.

1745. Defeat of the English at Fontenoy—Jacobite rebellion raised by Charles-Edward Stewart, who lands in Inverness-shire—He lives at Holyrood—He defeats Cope at Prestonpans, and marches into England—captures Carlisle, and retreats from Derby.
1746. Charles gains a slight success at Falkirk—He is finally defeated at Culloden, wanders in the Highlands, and escapes to France.
1748. *Treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle* ends the War of the Austrian Succession.
1751. Death of the Prince of Wales—Pitt is reconciled to the King's policy.
1752. The New Style of Reckoning (Gregorian Calendar) comes into use; September 3 became September 14.
1754. Death of Pelham—Duke of Newcastle Prime Minister.
1756. The Seven Years' War begins—Surrender of Minorca—Newcastle resigns—Duke of Devonshire Prime Minister, with Pitt as real leader—Tragedy of the Black Hole of Calcutta.
1757. Clive's victory at Plassey—Bengal secured to England—Newcastle Prime Minister—Pitt Foreign Secretary.
1759. Wolfe's victory on the Heights of Abraham—Surrender of Quebec—Defeat of the French at Minden—Destruction of the Brest fleet in Quiberon Bay.
1760. Surrender of Montreal and Conquest of Canada—Death of George II.

45. WALPOLE'S MINISTRY.

1. **Ascendency of the Whigs.**—The new King had reached the ripe age of forty-four. Like his mother, with whom he had sympathized, he had been jealously exiled from the English Court during his father's reign. One advantage which he possessed over his father was that he could speak the English tongue. The Whigs retained the ascendency, and in the new Parliament, which met in January 1728, Walpole had a decided majority.

2. **The Excise Bill.**—The first great battle of Walpole's Administration was fought over his Excise Bill. To check smuggling, which was practised to an incredible extent, 1733 Walpole proposed to bring wine and tobacco under the law of Excise. The merchants set up a cry of ruin, which was eagerly seized on and loudly echoed by the Opposition. When the cautious minister saw the violence of the storm, he withdrew the Bill, preferring to lose his point rather than to risk his power.

3. **The Porteous Mob.**—In 1736 all Scotland was agitated by the Porteous Riot. The mob of Edinburgh, enraged at the execution of a smuggler named Wilson, who had roused their admiration by helping a fellow-prisoner named

Robertson to escape, pelted the hangman and he killed Captain Porteous, commander of the City Guard, ordered his men to fire on the crowd, and several were killed. For this he was sentenced to death; but a reprieve came from London, and the rumour spread that a mail or two would bring him a full pardon.

4. It was resolved that he should not escape. On the night of the 17th of September, the Tolbooth Prison, in which he lay, was broken open by a mob; and he was brought out and hanged on a dyer's pole. The Government, on learning of this violence, brought in a Bill to demolish the walls and take away the charter of Edinburgh, so spirited, however, was the resistance of the Scottish members that the measure was abandoned.

5. **Decline of Walpole's Power.**—The death of Queen Caroline in 1737 deprived Walpole of a warm friend and supporter. Besides the ill-will of the King, he had incurred the hatred of Frederick, Prince of Wales, who had joined the "Patriots," as the malcontent Whigs were called, and was intriguing against his father. The Opposition, too, had received an important accession in William Pitt, afterwards Earl of Chatham, who had entered Parliament in 1735. The disasters of the Spanish War, although he entered on it against his will, shook Walpole's power past retrieving.

6. **The Spanish War.**—The Spanish War was occasioned by the cruisers of Spain claiming the right to search all English vessels found in Spanish waters. Walpole tried negotiation, but in vain; and war was proclaimed. When 1739 he heard the London joy-bells pealing, he was heard to mutter: "They may ring their bells now: they will soon be wringing their hands." And it was true; for the war was disastrous to England. A great fleet and army 1741 under Admiral Vernon and Lord Wentworth failed in an attack on Cartagena. The unhealthy climate swept off the English in hundreds, and there arose great discontent at home.

7. **Voyage round the World.**—Commodore Anson went with a squadron to relieve Vernon; but failing in his object, he sailed into the South Seas, and, after three years' cruising, took a Spanish treasure-ship, laden with £300,000. He re-

turned to England in 1744 with a solitary ship, having sailed round the world. He was subsequently made a peer.

8. Resignation of Walpole.—The persistent attacks on Walpole by the Opposition, led by William Pulteney and supported by William Pitt, were now producing their effect in the country. When a new Parliament met in December 1741, the Prime Minister found that his majority had almost disappeared. Walpole resigned in February following, and received the title of Earl of Orford. The Earl of Wilmington became Prime Minister; but Lord Carteret, one of Pitt's bitterest foes, was the ruling spirit in the Tory Cabinet. On Wilmington's death in the end of 1743, Walpole had sufficient influence with the King to effect the removal of Carteret. The Pelhams—Sir Henry Pelham and his brother the Duke of Newcastle—then took the helm of the State, which, partly by aristocratic influence and partly by bribery, they contrived to hold nearly as long as Walpole.

New Words in this Lesson.

ad-mi-ra'tion	dis-as'trous	per-sist'ent	smug'-gling
ag'i-tat-ed	ex-cise'	prac'tised	sol'i-tar-y
ar-is-to-cratic	in-cred'i-ble	pre-fer-ring	sub-se-quent-ly
con-trived'	in-trigu'ing	re-prieve'	sym'-pa-thized
de-mol'ish	mal'con-tent	re-triev'ing	to-bac'co

Notes and Meanings.

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1 Sympathized with, felt with; pitied. | 6 Right to search. The Spaniards complained that English traders smuggled English goods into Spain, and claimed the right to search English ships, which they exercised in a very insolent manner. |
| 2 Excise, a tax on home products, and on licenses to deal in certain things, as tea, tobacco, wine, and spirits. | Disastrous, ruinous. |
| Smuggling, importing articles without paying duty; cheating the revenue. | 8 Persistent, unceasing. |
| Incredible, that could not be believed. | Pulteney, afterwards Earl of Bath. |
| 3 Porteous Mob. The story is fully told in Scott's <i>Heart of Midlothian</i> . | Earl of Wilmington, formerly Sir Spencer Compton. |
| Reprieve, delay of execution; suspending of sentence of death. | Lord Carteret, afterwards Earl Granville. |
| 4 The Tolbooth prison, in the High Street. | Aristocratic influence, influence of noblemen. |
| 5 Malcontent, dissatisfied. | |

Questions:—1. How had George II. been treated by his father? What party retained the ascendancy? 2. What was the object of the Excise Bill? Why did Walpole drop it? 3. What was Captain Porteous's offence? 4. By whom was

he put to death? 5. What weakened Walpole's power? What accession of strength had the Opposition received? 6. What occasioned the Spanish War? How did England fare in it? 7. Who made a famous voyage round the world at this time? 8. When did Walpole resign? Who succeeded him? Who took the helm on Wilmington's death?

46. THE 'FORTY-FIVE.

1. The Austrian Crown.—While Walpole was yet in power a new European war—the War of the Austrian Succession—had broken out. Charles the Sixth of Austria, dying in 1740, had left a will by which he bequeathed all his dominions to his daughter Maria-Theresa. The Elector of Bavaria demanded Hungary; Frederick the Second of Prussia seized Silesia; and Louis of France denied her right to any part of her inheritance. England was alarmed at this union of France with Prussia, and sent an army across the Channel in defence of the young Queen. George the Second, leading in person, 1743 routed a French army near the village of Dettingen on the Main. Two years later (1745), at Fontenoy in Belgium, his second son, the Duke of Cumberland, was defeated in almost the only victory won by the armies of Louis the Fifteenth.

2. Prince Charles-Edward.—England, however, was chiefly affected by an offshoot of this war—"The 'Forty-five." As an act of retaliation, France encouraged the exiled Stewarts to make a bold push for the English throne. On July 25, 1745, Charles-Edward Stewart—the "Bonnie Prince Charlie" of Jacobite song—landed from a French brig at Moidart on the coast of Inverness-shire. He came with only seven officers to conquer the British Islands; but at five-and-twenty he was strong in the human breast. Many Highland chieftains hastened to his side. At the head of seven hundred clansmen he commenced a southward march. Aug. 19, 1745

3. The Prince at Holyrood.—Sir John Cope, the Royalist leader, had carelessly moved to Inverness, and the road was open. At Perth, Charles was proclaimed Regent for his father, "James the Eighth of Scotland." When he reached Edinburgh, Sept. 17, his little army had swelled to more than one thousand men. The citizens gladly opened their gates to the young Stewart, who took up his abode in the Palace of Holyrood.

4. **The Battle of Prestonpans.**—The same day Cope, having sailed southward, was landing his troops at Dunbar. Charles resolved to give battle at once. Moving, therefore, with a force of two thousand five hundred men, he had reached Carberry Hill when he saw the Royalist army, consisting of Cope's infantry and Colonel Gardiner's dragoons, in the narrow plain next the sea.

5. The great difficulty before the Highlanders was the passage of a deep morass which spread between the hosts. A safe pathway, however, was discovered; and at dawn the armies faced each other on the same level field. In about six minutes more the Highlanders had won the Battle of Sept. 21. Prestonpans. One rush did all. Having first discharged their pistols, they dashed on with the claymore and threw their enemies into confusion. The Royalist army broke in two. A few dragoons galloped off to Edinburgh, but the main body of the army fled, with Sir John at its head, to the shelter of the walls of Berwick. Among the slain was the pious and heroic Colonel Gardiner, who fell in sight of his own house.

6. **Invasion of England.**—If Charles had then pressed on to London, the throne of the House of Hanover might have fallen. But his ranks were thin, and six weeks passed before he could muster five thousand men. On the evening of the Oct. 31. last day of October, Charles left Holyrood for the purpose of invading England. After the capture of Carlisle, the southward march was continued in two divisions—one under the Prince himself, the other under Lord George Murray.

7. **Failure.**—Derby was reached on the 4th of December, but further Murray and the other officers refused to go. There had been no English rising, no French descent. Their little force was almost hemmed in by three armies numbering thirty thousand. The only way open to them was the way back again to Scotland. Charles yielded, sorely against his will, and the homeward march was at once begun.

Notes and Meanings.

¹ In person, the last occasion on which an English Sovereign was under fire.

Dettingen, in Bavaria; 18 miles east of Frankfort-on-the-Main. (Mons. Fontenoy, 24 miles north-west of

² Charles-Edward, son of James Stewart, the "Old Pretender," and therefore grandson of James II. He is also known as the "Young Pretender," and the "Chevalier Douglas." He claimed the throne for his father.

⁴ Carberry Hill, near Musselburgh. There Mary Queen of Scots surrendered to her nobles in 1567.
⁵ Morass, marsh.
Claymore, broadsword.
Prestonpans, $8\frac{1}{2}$ miles east of Edinburgh.

Questions:—1. What new European war had broken out? What victory did King George gain? 2. What formed an offshoot of that war? Who was the leader of the Jacobites? 3. How was he received in Edinburgh? 4. Where did he come upon Cope's army? 5. How was the Battle of Prestonpans won? 6. What mistake was then made? What English town was captured? 7. How far into England did the army penetrate?

47. DARK CULLODEN.

1. **Battle of Falkirk.**—With spirit cast down, and a disappointed leader, the army reached the heart of Scotland. A slight success at Falkirk roused their hopes for a time; but they were still driven northward, and had to seek shelter among the Grampians. The Duke of Cumberland—known by the unenviable name of "The Butcher"—had already arrived in Scotland to take command of the royalist forces, and had made Perth his head-quarters. Meanwhile Charles approached Inverness from the south-east.



2. **Culloden Moor.**—Cumberland marched to Aberdeen, then skirted the coast, and reached Nairn on the 14th of April. From Culloden House, where Charles had fixed his head-

quarters, the Highlanders marched out, with the hope of surprising the Royalists in a night attack; but the darkness misled them, and they were forced to fall back, and draw up in line of battle on Culloden Moor.

3. The Highland Onset.—At eleven, the foe began to appear in dark masses on the horizon. Cumberland drew up his men in three lines, with cavalry on each wing. Murray got leave from the Prince to make an onset with the right and the centre. Through the regiments of the front line the Highlanders went; but beyond the broken array they rushed on a living wall, which burst into a sheet of flame at their approach, and hurled them back scorched and reeling. They had in fact been caught in a trap.

4. The Macdonalds sulking.—Following up the effect of their volley, the royal troops charged the exhausted rebels and swept them in pitiable rout from the scene of their short success. On the left stood the Macdonalds, sulking because the post of honour on the right had been denied them, and watching with sullen brows the carnage of their countrymen. Refusing to fight, even at the call of their leader, they fell back to the fragments of the second line.

5. Flight of the Prince.—The battle was over. A faithful adherent, named O'Sullivan, seizing the bridle of the Prince's horse, forced him to leave the hopeless scene. One portion of the defeated army surrendered at Inverness; the other melted away into the glens and corries from which its motley materials had come. Charles fled, first to Invergarry Castle, and then to the west coast. Eight days after the battle he put to sea in a small boat, and succeeded in reaching South Uist. It proved a place of danger; but he was saved by the devotion of Flora Macdonald, who took him over to Skye in the disguise of her servant.

6. Faithful Friends.—Going thence to the mainland, he endured terrible hardships for some months. Once he saved himself only by creeping down in the dark among the boulders of a rocky river-bed, whose banks were lined with sentinels. On another occasion he lived three weeks in a cave at the mercy of lawless men, who, instead of giving information and securing the offered reward of £30,000, used to bring him

gossip and newspapers when they came back from a visit to Fort-Augustus.

7. Escape.—While perched with Cluny and Lochiel in "The Cage"—a den on Ben Alder—he heard that two French ships were waiting at the coast to take him off. Travelling only in the dark, he reached the shore in safety; and on the 20th of September he gladly reëmbarked for France. Running in a fog through the English cruisers, he landed on the 29th on the coast of Brittany.

8. The Sufferers.—About eighty suffered death for their devotion to his cause, among whom were the Scottish Lords Kilmarnock and Balmerino. For having aided the Prince in his escape, Flora Macdonald was imprisoned in London for a year. On her release she was supplied with money by admiring friends, and she emigrated with her husband to North America; but the war there induced them to return home, and they both died in Skye.

9. End of the Prince.—Charles-Edward spent his later days at Rome, under the title of Duke of Albany. The gallant young soldier, of whom so much has been said and sung, sank in later life into a broken-down drunkard. He died of apoplexy in 1788; and nineteen years later died his brother Henry, Cardinal of York—the last male of the Royal Stewart line.

10. Peace.—The war still lingered on the Continent. In 1745 Maria-Theresa had triumphed, her husband, Francis-Stephen, Grand-Duke of Tuscany, being chosen Emperor. Three years later the Treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle was signed by the other belligerents. The Protestant succession in England was guaranteed; and the Pretender and his family were excluded from France.

New Words in this Lesson.

bel-lig'-er-ents	ex-haust-ed	in-for-ma-tion	re-em-barked'
de-vo-tion	guar-an-tee'd	mot'-ley	sen'-ti-nels
drunk'-ard	ho-ri'-son	pit'-i-a-ble	un-en'-vi-a-ble

Notes and Meanings.

- 1 Duke of Cumberland, Prince William, the King's second son. He died in 1763.
- 2 Culloden Moor, or Drumossie Moor, eight miles north-east of Inverness.

Corries, hollow recesses in the mountains.

Motley, many-coloured; mixed.

Invergarry Castle, on the banks of Loch Oich, in Inverness-shire. It belonged to the Macdonalds of Glengarry, who were severely punished for helping the Pretender.

South Uist, one of the Outer Hebrides.

Cluny and Lochiel, Gordon of

Cluny, and Cameron of Lochiel. It is customary in the Highlands to call a chief by the name of his property.

Ben Alder, in the south of Inverness-shire, beside Loch Erich.

Aix-la-Chapelle, in Rhenish Prussia, on the frontier of Belgium; 40 miles south-west of Cologne. German name, Aachen.

Belligerents, persons at war.

Guaranteed, made secure.

Questions:—1. Where did the Pretender gain a slight success? Who took command of the Royal troops? 2. What led Charles to draw up his army on Culloden Moor? 3. What was the result of Murray's onset? 4. How did the Macdonalds behave? 5. Where did Charles flee first? Where next? Whose devotion saved him? 6. How did his friends show their faithfulness? 7. How did he at last escape? 8. Who suffered for his cause? 9. Where did he spend his last days? Who was the last male of the royal Stewart? 10. When was peace concluded?

48. PITT'S FOREIGN POLICY.

1. **Rise of Pitt.**—Ever since the retirement of Walpole, the man who had been most steadily coming to the front in English politics was William Pitt, the "Great Commoner." He had made himself offensive to King George by his dislike of the House of Hanover; but his opposition to the King's policy almost disappeared after the death of the Prince of Wales in 1751. By that event Prince George of Wales, the second son, a boy in his thirteenth year, became heir to the throne.

2. **The Seven Years' War.**—On the death of Pelham in 1754, he was succeeded by his brother, the Duke of Newcastle. When the Seven Years' War between Prussia and Austria opened, two years later, England and France naturally took opposite sides; and as France now supported Maria-Theresa, England formed an alliance with Frederick the Great of Prussia, who was George's nephew.

3. **The Devonshire-Pitt Ministry.**—The surrender of Minorca to France exposed the Ministry to a burst of popular fury, which forced Newcastle to resign. A Ministry was then formed by the Duke of Devonshire, with Pitt as Secretary of State. To appease the popular clamour, Admiral Byng, who

had failed to relieve Minorca, was tried and shot, in spite of the protest of Pitt.

4. **The Newcastle-Pitt Ministry.**—In April, the Devonshire-Pitt Ministry was dismissed at the instigation of the Duke of Cumberland.

So great a cry arose in 1757

of indignation

that the Ministry

was compelled to resign.

All Pitt (June). Newcastle

was nominal

Prime Minister, but

Pitt was really the

head of the Government.

Foreign Secretary, he under-

took the direction of

the war. Then fol-

lowed that remarkable series of successes which made Pitt's name famous, and led to the expansion of England in both hemispheres.

5. **The Contest with France.**—England was now in the midst of that gigantic contest with France for supremacy all over the world, which formed the leading feature of the eighteenth century. That struggle began in the long and keen rivalry between William the Third and Louis the Fourteenth. It was at the first of the French and Indian War of the Austrian Succession, of the Jacobite Rebellions, and of the Seven Years' War. It ran through the American War. It became a life-and-death struggle in the French Revolutionary War, and in the Peninsula. It was settled on the field of Waterloo, which established the supremacy of England.

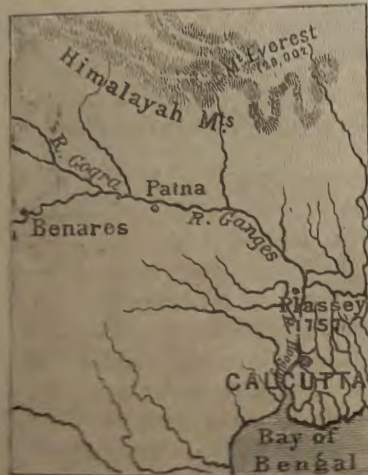
6. **The Struggle for India.**—In the Seven Years' War



WILLIAM PITT, EARL OF CHATHAM

(1756-1763) hostilities extended, almost for the first time, to the colonies of England and France. The governor of Pondicherry, the central station of the French in Hindustan, formed the scheme of conquering all India for France. Holding the Carnatic, But the tide of war, he soon overran the whole Carnatic. In the East India Company's service, who entered the army in 1746, and soon distinguished himself by the capture of Arcot.

The "Black Hole."—The conquest of Bengal was Clive's most remarkable achievement. Sujah-ad-Dowlah, Nabob or Prince of Bengal, attacked the English settlements by Jun 1, 1757. He then packed one hundred and sixty English prisoners into a chamber twenty feet square, which is the Black Hole of Calcutta (June 19). Next day three ghastly figures staggered or were lifted from the fetid den. Clive hastened to revenge. Landing at the mouth of the Hooghly in December, he forced his way to Calcutta. Early in 1757 Sujah-ad-Dowlah made a determined attack on that town with forty thousand men. Clive had only two thousand and four hundred men, most of them Sepoys. Yet he kept the Nabob at bay, and forced him to come to terms.



Nabob's army began to move toward the English lines, evidently with no hostile intention. Clive, seeing this movement,

hurled his whole force upon the camp and swept the van in rout before him. The British soldiers, hit men and about fifty Sepoys perished in the fight which secured for England the supremacy of India.

New Words in this Lesson.

bar-bar-i-ty	fet-id	in-sti-ga-tion	Rev-o-lu-tion-ar-y
clam-our	heir-ap-pär-ent	nom-in-al	ri-val-ry
ex-pän-sion	hem-i-spheres	re-tire-ment	stag-gered

Note and Meanings.

1. Retirement, withdrawal from public life. Offensive, disagreeable. Heir-apparent, one who is heir as far as appears.
2. George's nephew was Prince of Wales, daughter of George I. of England.
3. Clamour, outcry.
4. Instigation, incitement. Expansion, widening; growth of power.
5. Gigantic, vast.
6. Pondicherry, south-west of Madras. Robert Clive, born 1725; omitted Feb. 18, 1771.
7. Foul, having an offensive smell; Bala thom.
8. Charity, saving ruthlessly. Clive's Indian soldiers employed in the British Army.
9. Calcutta, ninety miles north of Calcutta.

Questions: 1. Who was the "Great Commoner"? Who became heir-apparent in 1751? 2. What part did England take in the Seven Years' War? 3. What military success did New England have? 4. Why was it claimed that Pitt's army was the best? 5. In what great contest was England then engaged? 6. To what did the Sepoys owe their defeat? 7. What was the "Black Hole" of Calcutta? 8. Why was the barbarity of the Sepoys so great? 9. In what battle was the British victory?

49. THE CONQUEST OF CANADA.

1. **France and England in America.**—France and England fought a long and bitter struggle in North America also. There the French held Canada, while the English settlers pressed to the coast of the thirteen colonies. The natural boundary between the settlements was formed by the St. Lawrence and the Lakes. But in 1752 a treaty of 1752 secured to the French the right to keep in French hands the territory between Canada and the Mississippi, thereby lined the river Ohio and the Alleghany Mountains with fortifications. This led to the French and English encounter at the Battle of the Clouds.

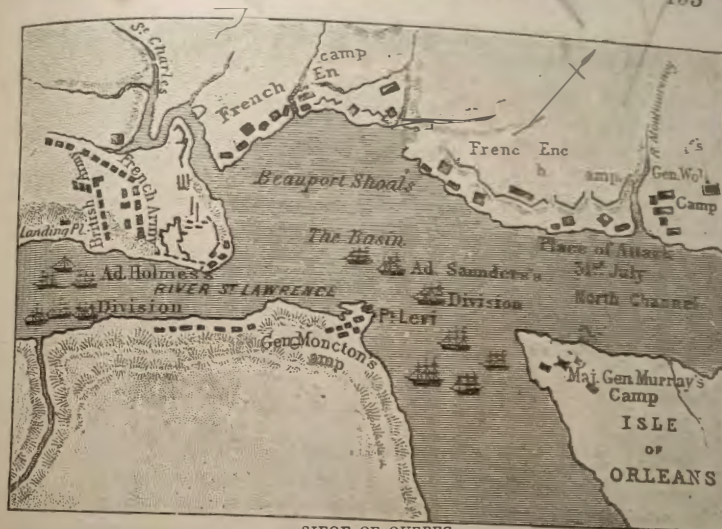
Attack on Quebec.—Late in the summer, the English took charge of the Foreign Office. Then the British Government decided that the campaign of 1759 should be the point of attack. An expedition, under General James Wolfe, sailed from England in June. Two land expeditions from the south were sent to the same point. The Marquis Montcalm commanded the French army.

Failure.—Arrived in the St. Lawrence, Wolfe disposed his army on the banks of the river and partly on the Isle of Orleans. During July the town was vigorously bombarded; but no impression could be made on the fortress. On the 31st day of July, Wolfe attacked Montcalm in his entrenchments on the left bank of the river. Those who first landed began the attack, without waiting for the support of the rest of the force. Overpowered by numbers, they were driven back with loss.

Stratagem.—At length a stratagem was tried. Wolfe concentrated his army, now reduced to five thousand men, on the west bank of the St. Lawrence. On the 10th of September, the whole army marched up the river to a point eight miles above Quebec, where a portion of the fleet was stationed. On the 12th, under cover of night, boats with muffled oars dropped quietly down the stream, bearing the soldiers to a point above Quebec ever since known as Wolfe's Cove. Wolfe himself was in the foremost boat, and as he sat amid his officers he received his excitement by reciting to them Gray's "Elegy." The earnestness with which he pronounced the line,

"The paths of glory lead but to the grave,"

impressed them deeply; and when he had finished, he said, "Gentlemen, I would rather have been the author of that poem than take Quebec to-morrow." **The Heights of Abraham.** A narrow path hidden by trees and brush ran zig-zag from the beach up the face of a steep rock, winding themselves up by the branches, holding on by the roots, the Highlanders climbed to the top and put to flight the French sentinels. Wolfe and his army followed almost silently in single file. The French



SIEGE OF QUEBEC.

able to haul only one light field-piece up the steep ascent. When day broke, on the morning of the 13th, four thousand and eight hundred British soldiers were forming in line of battle on the Heights of Abraham overlooking Quebec.

6. Surprise of the French.—The French were completely surprised; yet they advanced with great show and bravery. Wolfe, who was on foot with his Grenadiers, counselled his men not to fire until they saw the eye of the foe. On the 13th, when the French column were within forty yards, the British red line poured forth one simultaneous volley of musketry. It was decisive: the militia fled; the French column shattered and reeling wavered. Wolfe's death was a great loss. As he fell, he was surrounded by his men, and he was born to the ranks. The French soldiers were driven into irretrievable flight, and sought first and foremost the safety of the ramparts. Montcalm fell mortally wounded, and was born into Quebec.

7. Death of Wolfe.—On the 13th, Wolfe, a Grenadier officer, called out, "See,

they run!"—"Who run?" asked Wolfe—"The enemy, sir; they give way everywhere."—"Now, God be praised! I die happy." Montcalm died next morning. Quebec capitulated four days later. Montreal surrendered on the 8th of Sept. 8, September 1760, and Canada passed into the hands of the English.

c. **Death and Character of George the Second.**—On the 25th of the following month George the Second died suddenly of heart disease, in the seventy-seventh year of his age. Like his father, he was fond of the Whigs; and, while he was always niggardly towards his kingdom of England, he spared neither British blood nor British gold in securing and enlarging his electorate of Hanover.

New Words in this Lesson.

agile	con-cen-trat-ed	im-pressed	re-cit-ing
bom-bard-ed	con-verge	ir-re-triev-a-ble	sim-ul-ta-ne-ous
brav-er-y	coun-selled	lit-er-al-ly	strat-a-gem
ca-pli-tu-lat-ed	e-lect-or-ate	nig-gard-ly	ter-ri-tor-y
clam-bered	en-croach-ment	o-ver-pow-ered	traff-ic

Notes and Meanings.

- 1 **Encroachment**, seizing on the land of others.
- 2 **Wolfe**, born in Kent in 1726.
- 3 **Bombarded**, attacked with cannons.
- 4 **Stratagem**, device; trick.
- 5 **Agile**, active; nimble.
- 6 **Simultaneous**, at the same time.
- 7 **Capitulated**, surrendered.
- 8 **Niggardly**, mean; miserly.

Gray's "Elegy," a poem,—"Elegy written in a Country Churchyard," by Thomas Gray (1716-1771).

5 **Agile**, active; nimble.

6 **Simultaneous**, at the same time.

7 **Capitulated**, surrendered.

8 **Niggardly**, mean; miserly.

Electorate, domain of an Elector—a member of the body that used to elect the German Emperor.

Questions:—1. What brought the English into collision with the French in America? 2. What was the plan of the campaign of 1759? 3. What failure did Wolfe encounter? 4. What stratagem did he adopt? 5. How did he and his army reach the heights? 6. What order did he give his men? What was its effect? 7. What were Wolfe's last words? Who died next morning? 8. When did George II. die? What was his character?

GEORGE III.

Born 1738 A.D.—Grandson of George II.—Married Charlotte of Mecklenburg-Strelitz—Reigned 1760-1820 A.D.

SUMMARY OF THE REIGN.

1760. Newcastle and Pitt remain in office, but the Earl of Bute is made a Secretary of State.
1761. The Bourbon Family Compact (France, Spain, and Naples)—Pitt proposes war, but is over-ruled, and resigns.
1762. Bute Prime Minister—War of the Family Compact.
1763. *Treaty of Paris*—George Grenville Prime Minister—Wilkes is arrested on a general warrant, for charging the King with telling a lie. (He was afterwards expelled from Parliament, but in the end he triumphed. He was Lord Mayor of London in 1774.)
1765. The *Stamp Act* is passed as a means of taxing the American Colonies—Opposition of the Colonists—Rockingham Prime Minister—Lord Clive returns to India as Governor of Bengal. (Leaves 1767.)
1766. Repeal of the Stamp Act—Grafton Prime Minister.
1767. Taxes imposed on tea, lead, etc.—*Letters of Junius*.
1770. Lord North Prime Minister.
1773. Cargoes of taxed tea thrown into Boston Harbour.
1774. Congress meets at Philadelphia, and petitions the King against the taxes—Lord Clive commits suicide—Warren Hastings first Governor-General of India.
1775. The American War begins—Encounter at Lexington; indecisive—Battle of Bunker Hill; the English victorious—George Washington Commander-in-chief of the American Army.
1776. Howe driven out of Boston—*Declaration of Independence* issued—Hottelot takes New York.
- 1776-79. Captain Cook's voyages; he founds the Australian colonies.
1777. English victory at Brandywine River—Capture of Philadelphia—Capitulation of Burgoyne at Saratoga.
1778. Death of Chatham.
1780. The Gordon no-Popery riots in London; twenty-one rioters executed—The War in the Carnatic begun by Hyder Ali, Rajah of Mysore.
1781. Surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown.
1782. Rockingham Prime Minister—Shelburne Prime Minister; William Pitt Chancellor of the Exchequer—End of the Siege of Gibraltar—Hyder Ali crushed by Sir Eyre Coote—Independence of the United States.
1783. *Treaty of Versailles*—Portland Prime Minister; Max Wodarg Secretary of the India Bill is thrown out by the Lords—William Pitt Prime Minister.
1784. Pitt dissolves Parliament—Great majority for ministers in the new Parliament—Board of Control erected for government of India.
1785. Warren Hastings leaves India at port—Lord Cornwallis Commander-General.
1789. The great French Revolution—Burke denounces the execution in France.
1791. Passing of the *Canada Constitutional Act*: divided into Upper and Lower Canada—Quarrel of Burke and Fox.
1792. The Republic established in France—Tippo, son of Hyder Ali, submits to Cornwallis.

1793. War declared with the French Republic—Toulon taken and retaken.
 1794. Agitation for reform in England—*Habeas Corpus* Act suspended—Corsica taken—Howe defeats the Brest fleet.
 1795. Pitt forms with Russia and Austria the First Coalition against France—Warren Hastings acquitted after a seven years' trial.
 1797. Mutinies at the Spithead and the Nore—Jervis and Nelson's victory off Cape St. Vincent—Duncan's victory off Camperdown.
 1798. Nelson destroys the French fleet in Aboukir Bay—Irish rebellion—Lake routs the rebels at Vinegar Hill.
 1799. The French are repulsed at Acre by Sir Sidney Smith—Second Coalition against France (England, Russia, Austria, Portugal, etc.)—Baird storms Seringapatam: Conquest of Mysore: death of Tippoo Saib.
 1800. Bonaparte defeats Austria at Marengo and Hohenlinden—Malta taken by the British.
 1801. Abercromby's victory at Alexandria—Union of the Irish and English Parliaments—Pitt favours Roman Catholic emancipation—Being opposed by the King, he resigns—Addington Prime Minister—The Czar forms the Armed Neutrality League—Nelson destroys the Danish fleet at Copenhagen.
 1802. *Treaty of Amiens* (England, France, Spain, and Holland).
 1803. Renewal of the war—Execution of Robert Emmet and others for sedition in Ireland.
 1804. Break-down of the Addington Ministry—William Pitt Prime Minister—Bonaparte Emperor.
 1805. Third Coalition against France (England, Russia, Austria, and Sweden)—Nelson's great victory off Trafalgar: death of Nelson.
 1806. Death of Pitt—Lord Grenville Prime Minister; Fox Foreign Secretary—Death of Fox—Howick Foreign Secretary—Fourth Coalition against France (England, Russia, Prussia, and Saxony)—Napoleon issues the Berlin Decree.
 1807. The Orders in Council are issued—Duke of Portland Prime Minister; Canning Foreign Secretary—Capture of the Danish fleet—Portugal declines the Berlin Decree—The French invade Portugal.
 1808. Joseph Bonaparte is made King of Spain—The Peninsular War begins—Wellesley defeats Junot at Vimiera.
 1809. Moore gains the Battle of Corunna, and dies—Wellesley gains the Battle of Talavera—Failure of the Walcheren Expedition—Duel of Canning and Castlereagh—Fall of the Ministry—Perceval Prime Minister.
 1810. Wellington, victorious at Busaco, intrenches himself at Torres Vedras—The Burdett riots in London about Parliamentary Reform.
 1811. In consequence of the King's insanity, the Prince of Wales becomes Prince Regent—The Luddite riots begin: destruction of machinery—The English victorious at Barrosa, Fuentes d'Onoro, and Albuera.
 1812. Wellington victorious at Ciudad Rodrigo, Badajoz, and Salamanca—Mr. Perceval is shot in the lobby of the House of Commons—The Earl of Liverpool Prime Minister—War with the United States—Napoleon's invasion of Russia—The first steam-ship in Europe is launched on the Clyde by Henry Bell.
 1813. Wellington victorious at Vittoria and Toulouse—Napoleon, defeated at Leipzig, abdicates.
 1814. First *Treaty of Paris*—Napoleon sent to Elba—The *Treaty of Ghent*, with the United States—The Vienna Congress meets.
 1815. Napoleon leaves Elba and returns to Paris—Wellington and Blücher take the field in Belgium—Napoleon totally defeated at Waterloo—Surrenders to the English, and is sent to St. Helena (dies there 1821).

- Second Treaty of Paris*—Distress in England—*Corn Act* passed—Riots and destruction of property—The cry for Parliamentary Reform.
 1817. Many petitions for Reform sent to the House of Commons—The *Habeas Corpus* Act suspended—Burdett's motion for Reform rejected—Death of the Princess Charlotte.
 1819. "Peterloo:" Reform meeting at Manchester dispersed by the military—Burdett fined and imprisoned—The Six "Gagging Acts" passed.
 1820. Death of the Duke of Kent, and of George III.

50. AMERICAN INDEPENDENCE.

1. **Influence of Bute.**—George the Third, unlike the two preceding Georges, was an Englishman by education and by sympathy. In his first speech to Parliament he said, "I glory in the name of Briton." Newcastle and Pitt still 1760 remained in power; but it ere long became evident that the young King was entirely under the influence of the Earl of Bute, his former tutor, whom he had placed in the Cabinet.

2. **The Bourbon Compact.**—England had now become the first nation in the world; but her supremacy was not undisputed. Pitt learned that the Bourbon monarchs of France, Spain, and Naples had entered into a Family Compact. Foreseeing an inevitable war, he boldly proposed to 1761 strike the first blow, against the colonies of Spain. The King, influenced by Bute, refused to follow his advice; and Pitt resigned.

3. **Bute Prime Minister: War.**—In the following year Bute became Prime Minister; and then, as Pitt had foretold, Spain declared war, in terms of the Family Compact. In the short war which followed, England had many brilliant successes; and soon both France and Spain sought peace. Bute was so alarmed by the increase of the National Debt that he readily yielded to their desire, and the *Treaty of Paris* was concluded in February 1763. It confirmed the cession of Canada to England. Pitt denounced the peace; both the peace and the Ministry became unpopular; and Bute was so alarmed by the rising tide of popular dislike, that he resigned. The Honourable George Grenville was his successor.

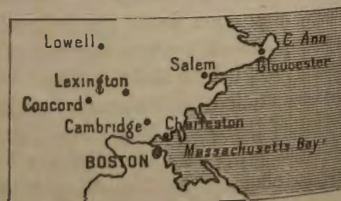
4. **The American Stamp Act.**—During Grenville's Ministry (1764)

try, the events occurred which led to the great American War. Grenville, desirous to meet the cost of the last war, proposed to tax certain papers used in America; and the Stamp Act was therefore passed. The Colonists replied, that since they had no representatives in the British Parliament, they would pay no taxes to Great Britain. At the same time, they offered to vote voluntary contributions to the imperial treasury.

5. **New Taxes.**—Grenville at once resigned; the Marquis of Rockingham took his place, and the Stamp Act was repealed. The Duke of Grafton, and Pitt, now Earl of Chatham, were next called to office; and, in spite of the warnings of the great statesman, new taxes—on tea, lead, glass, paper, and painters' colours—were laid on the Colonists, whose discontent grew hourly greater. In 1768 Chatham retired; and two years later the Duke of Grafton gave place to Lord North, a Tory Premier, under whom chiefly the American War was conducted.

6. **Boston Harbour.**—The taxed tea was still sent to America. Some twenty daring spirits, dressed and painted like Indians, boarded the tea-ships which lay in Boston Harbour, and emptied the cargoes into the sea (December). The British Government shut up the port of Boston. Then the States met in Congress at Philadelphia, and sent an address to the King, in which they asked that the oppressive taxes should be removed. The petition was slighted. To the eloquent warnings of such men as Lord Chatham and Edmund Burke the ministers closed their ears.

7. **Lexington and Bunker Hill.**—After ten years of wordy strife, actual war began. It continued with varying success during eight campaigns. The first outbreak was at Lexington, between April 19, 1775, Boston and Concord, where a few American riflemen attacked a detachment of English soldiers that was marching to seize some war stores. More importance attaches to the attempt of



the Americans to seize and fortify Bunker Hill, overlooking Boston. The attempt failed; but it proved to the Colonists that it was possible for undisciplined patriots to meet on equal terms the best troops England could send against them. Henceforth the success of the Revolution was assured. Two days previously, Congress had unanimously appointed George Washington Commander-in-chief. He immediately joined the army at Boston.



GEORGE WASHINGTON.

8. **Declaration of Independence.**—Early in the second campaign, General Howe was compelled to evacuate Boston and to sail for Halifax; and then was issued, by the Congress at Philadelphia, the famous document called "The Declaration of Independence." July 4, 1776 In August, General Howe seized Long Island, drove Washington from New York, and planted the English flag on its batteries.

9. **Saratoga.**—At the opening of the third campaign the Americans obtained aid in men and money from France. A victory at the Brandywine river, and the capture of Philadelphia, raised hopes in England that the subjugation of the Colonies was not far distant. But a great humiliation changed all these hopes into fears. General Burgoyne, marching from Canada, was so hemmed in by the American troops at Saratoga, that he was forced to surrender (October 16). Thenceforward America had decidedly the best of it in the war.

10. **Death of Chatham.**—In the fourth year of the war, the venerable Chatham, while thundering, in spite of age and illness, against a proposal to grant the Colonies independence, fell in a fit on the floor of the House of Lords,

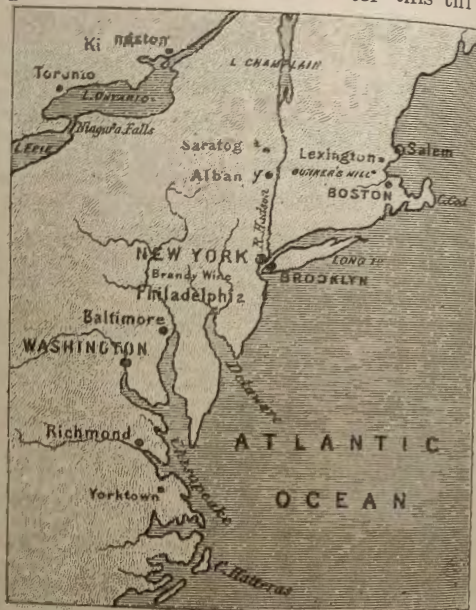
and was carried to a bed whence he never rose. He died, five weeks afterwards.

11. Yorktown.—No event of note occurred after this till the seventh campaign, when a second great disaster befell the British arms. Lord Cornwallis was, by the skillful movements of Washington, shut up in Yorktown, and compelled to surrender with seven thousand men. This was the decisive blow; for although the war lingered through another campaign, the American Colonies were now virtually severed from England.

12. Independence.—The Independence of the Thirteen United States was after some time formally acknowledged; and they became a Republic, governed by an elected President, George Washington being the first to hold the office. During the peace negotiations, Lord Rockingham died, and was succeeded by Lord Shelburne, with William Pitt the younger as Chancellor of the Exchequer.

New Words in this Lesson.

car'goes	de-tach'ment	in-ev'i-ta-ble	u-nan'i-mous-ly
ces'sion	e-vac-u-ate	op-pres'sive	un-dis-ci-plined
Con'gress	Hon'our-a-ble	re-pealed'	un-dis-pūt-ed
con-tri-bu-tions	hu-mil-i-a-tion	ri'fle-men	ven'er-a-ble
de-sir-ous	im-pe-ri-al	sev-er-ed	vol-un-tar-y



THE INDIAN EMPIRE.

Notes and Meanings.

- 2 Family Compact, a league of members of one royal family. Louis XV. of France, Charles III. of Spain, and Ferdinand of Naples, were all descended from Louis XIV. of France.
- Inevitable, unavoidable.
- 3 Cession, giving up.
- 4 Voluntary contributions, free-will offerings.
- The imperial treasury, the home government.
- 6 Boston, the capital of Massachusetts (United States).
- Philadelphia, in Pennsylvania; the second city of the Union.
- Edmund Burke, a distinguished orator and philosophical writer; then member for Bristol.
- 7 Lexington, eleven miles north-west of Boston.

- Undisciplined, not trained to war.
- George Washington, born in Virginia, 1732; Commander-in-chief of the American Army, 1775. First President of the United States, 1789; re-elected, 1793. Retired, 1797; died, 1799.
- Halifax, capital of Nova Scotia.
- Long Island, opposite New York, between New York Bay and the Atlantic.
- 9 Subjugation, conquest.
- Humiliation, humbling.
- Saratoga, in New York State; 32 miles north of Albany.
- 11 Yorktown, in Virginia; south-east of Richmond.
- 12 President, chief magistrate.
- William Pitt, the younger; second son of the Earl of Chatham. Born 1759, died 1806.

Questions:—1. What did George say in his first speech to Parliament? Under whose influence was he? 2. What led to Pitt's resignation? 3. What war followed? Why did Bute resign? 4. What led directly to the American War? 5. What was done in spite of Chatham's warnings? Under whom, Prime Minister, was the war chiefly carried on? 6. What took place in Boston Harbour? 7. Where were the first conflicts with the Colonists? Whom did they make Commander-in-chief? 8. When was the "Declaration of Independence" issued? 9. What was the turning-point of the war? 10. When did Chatham die? 11. What was the decisive blow of the war? 12. By what treaty was Independence acknowledged?

51. THE INDIAN EMPIRE.

1. Clive Governor of Bengal.—After Clive's departure from India (1760) things went wrong. The East India Company's servants practised extortion; the service became disorganized, and the native princes began to throw off their allegiance. In these circumstances Clive, now Lord Clive of Plassey, was induced to return to India in 1765, as Governor of Bengal. He set himself vigorously to reform the service, and he concluded a favourable treaty with the Mogul Emperor. But his health again gave way, and he finally left India in 1767.

2. Warren Hastings first Governor-General.—Clive's de-

parture was followed by a long succession of disasters. To strengthen the Government, Lord North passed in 1773 the



LORD CLIVE.

Regulating Act, by which the Governor of Bengal was made superior to the Governors of Madras and Bombay; and Warren Hastings was appointed first Governor-General of India. In the same year General Burgoyne led an attack on Clive's character in the House of Commons, which signally failed. Though actually acquitted, the stain cast on his good name preyed on his mind, and drove

him to take his own life, November 1774.

3. War with Hyder Ali.—Hastings was not over-scrupulous in the means he adopted for filling his treasury. From the first, however, his administration was marked by the greatest vigour. In 1780 Hyder Ali overran the Carnatic and threatened Madras. Hastings made peace with the Mahrattas, and hurled against Hyder the whole of his available forces under Sir Eyre Coote. Coote gained two brilliant victories over him in 1781, and finally crushed him at Arnee in 1782. Hyder died before the end of the year.

4. Fox's India Bill.—Though the country was pledged to peace with the United States, the Treaty of Versailles was everywhere unpopular, and led to the overthrow of the Shelburne Ministry. A Coalition Ministry was then formed by the Duke of Portland and Charles James Fox. The chief subject that engaged the attention of this Ministry was the govern-

ment of India. Fox, in his India Bill, prepared by himself and Burke, proposed to vest the government of India for seven years in a Commission appointed by a permanent Council, President of the Crown. The Commons passed the measure, but it was violently opposed by the King through his influence, and the Lords rejected it.

5. Pitt Prime Minister.—The Portland Ministry was dismissed (December), and Pitt became Prime Minister and Chancellor of the Exchequer, in his tenth year. His task was one of great difficulty; for he had to contend with a hostile majority led by the most experienced Parliamentary tacticians of the day. For four months he fought with matchless skill and unflinching courage. The King supported him, and the mass of the nation was in his favour. Gradually the majority dwindled down. When it had been reduced from one hundred and four to one, he dissolved Parliament (March 24).

6. The Board of Control.—In the new Parliament, Pitt had an overwhelming majority, which insured his supremacy during the remainder of his life. One of the first uses he made of his power was to settle the government of India. This he did in 1784 by an Act erecting the Board of Control, which consisted of six Privy Councillors appointed by the Crown, the principal Secretaries of State, and the Chancellor of the Exchequer. This Board, which continued till the East India Company was abolished in 1858, was an Indian Commission sitting in London and exercising supreme authority over the government of India and the affairs of the Company.

7. Trial of Warren Hastings.—Warren Hastings finally quitted India in 1785; and he left it in a state of unexampled peace. At first he was received at home with marked favour; but by-and-by murmurs of detraction began to be heard, and eventually he was impeached before the House of Lords. The chief charges against him were:—that he had hired out English troops to crush certain free native tribes; and that he had extorted large sums of money from native princes. The trial commenced in 1788. It lasted seven years, and in the end Hastings was acquitted. But the expenses of the trial had ruined him, and he received a pension from the

Company which enabled him to pass the close of his life in comfort.

8. Conquest of Mysore.—Hastings was succeeded as Governor-General by Lord Cornwallis, under whom the war against Tippoo Saib was so vigorously prosecuted that in 1792 the latter was forced to submit.



A few years later, however, a change in the government encouraged the Rajah to resume hostilities. In 1799 a powerful army was despatched to Mysore under General Harris. Seringapatam was stormed by Sir David Baird, and Tippoo was slain. Colonel Arthur Wellesley (afterwards the great Duke of Wellington), who had taken a prominent part in the campaign, was then appointed English Governor of Mysore.

New Words in this Lesson.

a-vail'a-ble	dis-or'gan-ized	in-sured'	scru'pu-lous
Co-a-li'tion	e-vent'u-al-ly	prom'i-nent	tac-ti'cians
de-trac'tion	ex-pe'ri-enced	pros'e-cut-ed	un-ex-am'pled

Notes and Meanings.

- 1 Disorganized, thrown into disorder.
- 2 Warren Hastings, born 1732; the son of a Worcestershire gentleman—Hastings of Church-hill, near Daylesford.
- 3 Scrupulous, conscientious; honest.
- 4 The Carnatic, the south-east coast of India.
- 5 Hyderabad. He was a Mohammedan soldier of fortune, the son of a petty chief in Mysore, who by his energy made him a master of that State, and transmitted the title of Rajah to his son.
- 6 Coalition Ministry, a ministry formed of members of different parties.
- 7 Fox, Charles James, son of Lord Holland. Born 1749; died 1806.
- 8 Tacticians, managers; men skilled in political tactics.
- 9 Detraction, slander.
- 10 Eventually, at last.
- 11 Tippoo Saib, Hyder Ali's son and successor.

Questions:—1. What led to Clive's return to India? 2. Who was the first Governor-General? 3. With whom did Hastings engage in war? What was the result? 4. What was the nature of Fox's India Bill? What was its fate? 5. At what age did Pitt become Prime Minister? When did he dissolve Parliament? 6. How did he settle the government of India? 7. For what was Warren Hastings tried? When was he acquitted? 8. What led to the conquest of Mysore? Who was its first English Governor?

52. THE FRENCH REVOLUTION.

1. The French Monarchy overthrown.—The French Revolution, which began in 1789, was the greatest event of the eighteenth century. Tyranny, royal extravagance, and heavy taxation, had led to confusion in the national finances of France, and to widespread discontent. When redress of grievances was sought in vain, the Paris mob stormed the Bastille, or State prison. The ancient Bourbon monarchy was overturned; and France was drenched in blood.

2. Effects in England.—The ferment quickly spread to England, and imbittered party feeling there. Many of the friends of reform were alarmed by the proceedings in France, and became opponents of change. Edmund Burke, in particular, denounced the excesses in France, and foretold the overturn of law and order. He quarrelled with his lifelong friend, Fox, because he took the opposite side.



EDMUND BURKE.

3. First Coalition against France.—The Republic was established in France in 1792, and one of its first acts was to

offer help to the English people against their "tyrannical" Government. When Louis the Sixteenth and his Queen were guillotined in the following year, war was declared against the French Republic by England, Holland, Spain, Austria, Prussia, and five smaller States. The English arms were generally successful. Lord Hood took Corsica. Lord Howe defeated the Brest fleet off the west of Brittany. Most of the French settlements in the East and the West Indies were taken (1794). In the following year, Holland, Prussia, and Spain made peace with France. Nevertheless Pitt resolved to prosecute the war, and succeeded in forming with Russia and Austria the First Coalition against France.

4. **Mutinies in the English Navy.**—In England a dangerous mutiny broke out in the Royal Navy. The seamen demanded more pay, better food, and other improvements in their position. At the Spithead they were easily pacified; but at the Nore the mutineers seized the ships and anchored them across the Thames, in order to shut up the mouth of the river. The men did not return to their duty until "Rear-Admiral Parker" and the other ringleaders had been arrested and hanged.

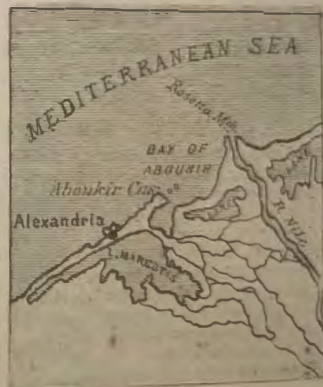
5. **Naval Victories.**—Two great naval victories relieved the gloom of the year. In February, off Cape St. Vincent, Admiral



6. **Second Coalition against France.**—Napoleon Bonaparte, who had risen to be head of the French army, spent two cam-

paigns in Egypt and Syria, in a fruitless attempt to open a path to India. Sailing from Toulon with a great fleet and army, he took Malta on his way, and landed at Alexandria. Then pressing on to Cairo, he defeated the Egyptian in the Battle of the Pyramids. But he had been followed by Admiral Nelson, who annihilated his fleet as it lay in the Bay of Aboukir. Aug. 1, 1798. Never was a naval victory more complete than that of the Nile. Of seventeen French ships eleven were taken and two were burned. Its political effect was powerful. It enabled Pitt to form a Second Coalition against France, in which England was joined, not only by Russia and Austria, but also by Portugal, Turkey, and Naples (1799).

7. **Battle of Alexandria.**—Bonaparte, now imprisoned in Egypt, led his soldiers into Syria early in 1799, and laid siege to Acre; but so gallantly was it defended by Sir Sidney Smith, that the French were forced to retreat. Alarming news from Paris caused Bonaparte to hurry back to France. The army thus abandoned lost spirit, and was finally routed at Alexandria in 1801 by Sir Ralph Abercromby, who, however, received a mortal wound during the action.



8. **The Irish Union.**—In no part of Europe did the evil example of the French Revolution bear more bitter fruit than in Ireland. The society of United Irishmen agitated for the separation of Ireland from Great Britain, and a secret correspondence was held with France. An aimless rising took place, and was effectually put down by General Lake at Vinegar Hill. But this unsettled state of affairs showed the necessity of binding Ireland more closely to the Empire. After many debates and much opposition in Ireland, the Union of the Parliaments was effected on the first day of 1801. Then reformed the people of Ireland were

to be represented in the Imperial Parliament by thirty-two Lords and one hundred Commons,—since increased to one hundred and three.

9. Pitt succeeded by Addington.—Pitt thought that the Union with Ireland would be more complete and lasting if Roman Catholics were “emancipated;” that is to say, if 1801 they were allowed to sit in Parliament and to hold public offices, like their fellow-citizens. The King refused to listen to this proposal, and consequently Pitt resigned, after having held office for upwards of seventeen years. He was succeeded by Henry Addington (February).

New Words in this Lesson.

an-ni-hil-ät-ed	ex-cess-es	im-prove-ments	par-tic-u-lar
Com-mo-dore	fer-ment	mu-ti-neers	ring-lead-ers
con-se-quent-ly	guil-lo-tined	op-po-nents	sep-a-ra-tion
e-man-ci-pät-ed	im-bit-tered	pac-i-fied	un-set-tled

Notes and Meanings.

- 2 Ferment, agitation; tumult.
- 3 Guillotined, beheaded with the guillotine, a machine called after the inventor, Dr. Guillotin.
- Prosecute, carry on.
- Coalition, a union of States.
- 4 The Spithead, a roadstead opposite Portsmouth, between Portsea Island and the Isle of Wight.
- The Nore, a roadstead on the Thames, opposite Sheerness.
- Mutineers, those who take part in a mutiny or rebellion against the rulers of the army or the navy.
- Ringleader, the “leader” of a “ring” in a dance; the head of a mutiny.
- 5 Cape St. Vincent, the south-western extremity of Portugal.
- Camperdown, on the coast of Holland; north-west of Amsterdam.
- 6 Malta, an island in the Mediter-
- ranean; due south of Sicily. Chief town, Valetta. It is one of England’s most important ocean fortresses.
- Alexandria, a city of Egypt, founded by and named after Alexander the Great.
- Cairo, the chief city of Egypt; south-east of Alexandria. The Pyramids are on the opposite side of the Nile from Cairo.
- Annihilated, reduced to nothing; utterly destroyed.
- Aboukir’. The bay is east of Alexandria, between Aboukir castle and the mouth of the Nile.
- 7 Acre, on the coast of Syria, near the foot of Mount Carmel. It is famous for the number of its sieges.
- 8 Vinegar Hill, near Enniscorthy; north-west of Wexford.
- 9 Emancipated, set free.

Questions :—1. What brought on the French Revolution? 2. What effect had it in England? 3. What States declared war against the French Republic? When was the first coalition formed? Who composed it? 4. When and where did the English sailors mutiny? 5. What naval victories were won in 1797? 6. What was the Battle of the Nile? What did it enable Pitt to form? 7. Where

was the French army in Egypt finally routed? 8. What made a legislative union of Ireland with Great Britain necessary? When was it accomplished? 9. What led to Pitt’s resignation? Who succeeded him?

53. COPENHAGEN AND TRAFALGAR.

1. The Armed Neutrality League.—When Bonaparte suddenly returned from the East in 1799, he overthrew the Directory and established the Consulate. He and two others were made Consuls; but he was practically supreme. He then hurled his forces against Austria, humbled her on the fields of Marengo and Hohenlinden, and forced her to 1800 accept of terms of peace (1801). Meanwhile he had succeeded in detaching Russia from the coalition; and the Czar formed, with Prussia, Sweden, and Denmark, the Armed Neutrality League of the Northern Powers. England was thus left almost alone in the struggle with France.

2. Copenhagen bombarded.—The bombardment of Copenhagen by Lord Nelson gave a sharp rebuke to the Danes, and seriously damaged the Northern League. It was on April 2, 1801 this occasion that Nelson, when Admiral Sir Hyde Parker signalled to him to cease firing, turned his telescope toward the signal, but held it to his sightless eye, and went on with the attack, desiring his own signal for “closer action” to be nailed to the mast!



3. Treaty of Amiens.—A second and fatal blow to the League was the death of its originator, the Czar Paul. His successor, Alexander, formed a treaty with England, which Denmark and Sweden joined. The way being thus smoothed

for a general peace the Treaty of Amiens was concluded and signed on the 27th of March 1802. The parties to it were England, France, Spain, and Holland. The war had raised the National Debt of England to £520 000 000 sterling.

4. **The War renewed.**—The peace was of short duration. Malta had been taken by the British in 1800, and the Government resolved that it should not be evacuated until it was certain that Bonaparte would not seize it for himself. They proposed to hold it for ten years, and then to restore it to the natives. This *ultimatum* having been rejected by France, 1803 war was declared by the King on the 18th of May 1803. Four days later a decree of the First Consul threw into prison several thousand English tourists, whom the peace had induced to cross the Channel.

5. **Pitt again Prime Minister.**

—When the Addington Ministry broke down in 1804, the King commissioned Pitt

to form a 1804 new Cabinet, under the special condition that Fox was to have no place in it. Pitt further agreed to postpone the question of the Roman Catholic disabilities. Fox led the Opposition in the Commons,

and Grenville in the Lords. About the same time Bonaparte was proclaimed Emperor of the French, with the title of Napoleon the First.



WILLIAM PITT, SECOND SON OF LORD CHATHAM.

6. **Third Coalition against France.**—Pitt then formed—with Russia, Austria, and Sweden—Third Coalition against France. France was joined by Spain. Napoleon meditated an invasion of England, before marching against Austria. His great difficulty was, that he could not get command of the Channel, so watchful were Nelson and the other English Admirals. To decoy Nelson from his post, Napoleon sent his fleet across the Atlantic, to threaten the West Indies. Nelson followed him. The French fleet, escaping Nelson's notice, suddenly returned to Spanish waters. Nelson returned to England to rest; but when he heard that the French and Spanish fleets had taken refuge in Cadiz harbour, where they were watched by Collingwood, he at once tendered his services to Pitt.

7. **Battle of Trafalgar.**—On the 14th September his flag ran to the top-mast of the *Victory* in Portsmouth harbour. On the 21st October he sighted a great line of vessels between him and the low dark headland of Trafalgar. They were the combined fleets of France and Spain, amounting to thirty-three sail of the line and seven smaller vessels. Nelson had



twenty-seven first-rates and six others. In two columns, the one led by Nelson in the *Victory*, the other by Collingwood in the *Royal Sovereign*, the English fleet bore down on the enemy, whose ships had drifted out of a straight line into the form of an irregular crescent. Words were then signalled from the mast-head of the *Victory* which have ever since stirred the heart like a peal of national music—"England expects every man to do his duty."

8. **Death of Nelson.**—At ten minutes past twelve Collingwood reached the centre of the enemy's line, which he succeeded in throwing into confusion. Nelson then directed his flag-

ship, the *Victory*, against that horn of the French crescent which pointed towards Cadiz. In the midst of the action the



LORD NELSON.

rigging of the *Victory* became entangled with that of the *Redoubtable*. Every stage or cradle on the masts of the latter was filled with French riflemen, who fired at the officers and men on the decks of the *Victory*. A one-armed officer with stars on his breast, on the quarter-deck of the English ship, attracted the eye of a rifleman in the mizzen-top. He fired; and Nelson fell, shot through epaulet, shoulder, and spine. To Captain Hardy of the *Victory* he said, "They have done for me at last, Hardy; my back-bone is shot through." Three hours later he died, cheered in his last moments by the assurance of a complete victory. Ere the battle ceased, nineteen ships of the line had struck their flags. Nelson was buried in St. Paul's Cathedral, London, the whole nation mourning for its "darling hero." His brother was raised to the peerage, and large grants of money were made to him and to his sister.

New Words in this Lesson.

bom-bard'-ment	dis-a-bil'i-ties	med'i-tāt-ed	post-pone'
Con-su-late	en-tan'-gled	miz'-zen-top	tel'e-scope
cres-cent	ep'-au-let	Neu-tral'i-ty	tour-ists
Di-rec-tor-y	ir-reg'-u-lar	o-rig'-in-āt-or	ul-ti-ma'-tum

Notes and Meanings.

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1 Consulate, government by consuls or chief magistrates. | 4 Ultimatum, last or final offer of terms. |
| Marengo, in the north of Italy; south-east of Turin. | 6 Meditated, thought on. |
| Hohenlinden, in Bavaria; east of Munich. | 7 Trafalgar, midway between Cadiz and the Strait of Gibraltar. |
| Armed neutrality, position of a State that is ready for war, but takes no side. | Irregular crescent, a curve roughly formed. |
| 3 Amiens, on the Somme; north of Paris. The treaty was generally regarded as only a truce. | 8 Entangled, involved; fastened. |
| | Mizzen-top, the small platform at the top of the lower mizzen-mast—the mast nearest the stern. |
| | Epaulet, shoulder-piece. |

Questions:—1. What league was formed against England? By whom? 2. What famous incident occurred in the attack on Copenhagen? 3. When was the Treaty of Amiens signed? 4. What led to the renewal of the war? 5. On what conditions did Pitt resume office? 6. Of whom was his third coalition composed? Why did Napoleon send his fleet across the Atlantic? 7. When was the Battle of Trafalgar fought? What was Nelson's last signal? 8. How was he killed?

54. THE BATTLE OF THE BALTIC.

[This song celebrates Nelson's victory at Copenhagen in 1801.]

- Of Nelson and the North
Sing the glorious day's renown,
When to battle fierce came forth
All the might of Denmark's crown,
And her arms along the deep proudly shone;
By each gun the lighted brand,
In a bold, determined hand,
And the Prince of all the land
Led them on.

Like leviathans afloat,
Lay their bulwarks on the brine;
While the sign of battle flew
On the lofty British line:
It was ten of April morn by the chime:
As they drifted on their path,
There was silence deep as death;
And the boldest held his breath
For a time.

2. But the might of England flushed
 To anticipate the scene;
 And her van the fleeter runned
 O'er the deadly space between.
 "Hearts of oak!" our captains cried, with each gun
 From its adamantine point
 Spread a death-hade round the ships,
 Like the hurricane eclipse
 Of the sun!

And in! again! again!
 And the havoc did not lack,
 Till feeble cheer the Dane
 To our cheering sent us back;—
 Their shots along the deep slowly boom:
 The cease—and all in wail,
 They strike the hattered sail,
 Or, in conflagration pale,
 Light the gloom!

Out come the Victor then,
 She hailed them o'er the wave:
 "Are ye brothers! ye are men!
 And we conquer but to save;
 Peace, instead of death, let us bring;—
 But yield, proud foe, thy fleet,
 With the crews, at England's feet,
 And make submission meet
 To our King."

I enmark blessed our Chief
 That he gave her wounds repose;
 And the wounds of joy and grief
 From her people wildly rose.
 As Death withdrew his shades from the day;
 While the Sun looked smiling bright
 O'er a wide and woful night,
 Was the fire of funeral light
 Dried away!

4. Now joy, old England, raise
 For the tidings of thy might,

THE BATTLE OF THE BALTIC.

By the festal cities' blaze,
 While the wine-cup shines in light;—
 And yet, amidst that joy and uproar,
 Let us think of them that leap,
 Full many a fathom deep,
 By thy wild and stormy teep,
 Elsinore!

Brave hearts! to Britain's pride
 Once so faithful and so true,
 On the deck of fame that died,
 With the gallant, good Riou;
 Soft sigh the winds of heaven o'er their grave!
 While the billow mournful rolls,
 And the mermaid's song condoles,
 Singing glory to the souls
 Of the brave!

New Words in this Lesson.

ad-a-man'tine	con-fla-gra'tion	fes'tal	mer'-maid
bul'-warks	e-clipse'	glo'-rious	re-nown'
con-does'	fath'-om	le-vi'-th	wo'-ful

Notes and Meanings.

1 The North, the league of the northern Powers, which Nelson's victory broke up.

The Prince of all the land, the Prince Regent of Denmark, who commanded the Danish force. He had been declared agent in 1794 when his father, Christian VII., became demented. In 1806 he succeeded to the throne as Frederick VI.

2 Admiration, sea-monster. In fiction a diabolical creature. Hurrio is a whirlwind, a storm, an obdurate by day cloud during a great storm. Until the day, the day.

3 Ye are brothers. When some of the Danish ships which had struck their colours fired upon the boats sent to take possession of them, Nelson wrote to the Crown Prince: "The brave Danes are the brothers, and should never be the enemies, of the English;" referring to their common Teutonic origin and to the mingling of the races.

4 Elsinore, a town and sea-port of Denmark, on the western side of the Sound.

Riou. Captain Riou, justly styled "the gallant and the good" by Lord Nelson in his despatches, was killed in the battle.

55. THE STRUGGLE WITH NAPOLEON.

1. The Third Coalition broken up.—While England triumphed at sea, Napoleon, as usual, was successful on land.

In October, he caught General Mack at Ulm, and forced him to surrender with twenty-eight thousand Austrians. Napoleon then occupied Vienna. In December, he defeated the Emperors of Austria and Russia at Austerlitz, and forced on Austria the Treaty of Pressburg. This broke up the coalition. At the same time Prussia broke her alliance with England, and joined France, in the hope of acquiring Hanover.

2. Death of Pitt; and of Fox.—In January 1806, Pitt succumbed to the toils of statesmanship. He was only forty-six years of age when he died. A magnificent public funeral, and a grant of £40,000 to pay his debts,



CHARLES JAMES FOX.

testified the regard in which he was held by his contemporaries. Lord Grenville became Prime Minister, with Fox as Foreign Secretary. The friends of this Ministry boasted that it contained "All the Talents" of the country; a description which its enemies applied to it in derision. In September Fox died, aged fifty-seven. He received a public funeral, and his body was laid in Westminster Abbey, beside that of his rival, Pitt.

His place as Foreign Secretary was taken by Lord Howick, afterwards Earl Grey.

3. Fourth Coalition against France.—The new Foreign Secretary succeeded in forming a Fourth Coalition against France, in which Great Britain was joined by Russia, Prussia, and Saxony. The conduct of Prussia not unnaturally excited Napoleon's wrath. She had occupied Hanover in April, and, though then at peace with England, had accepted a gift of it from Napoleon. But the erection of the Confederation of the Rhine in July excited her jealousy, and in October she declared war against France. At Prussia, therefore, Napoleon resolved to strike the first blow. Within a week of the declaration of war, he inflicted on her the irretrievable defeat of Jena; and on the same day another division of his army overthrew the King of Prussia at Auerstadt, ten miles farther north.

4. The Berlin Decree: the Orders in Council.—Napoleon then marched to Berlin, and issued thence his famous Berlin Decree against English commerce. This famous Decree was the beginning of Napoleon's Continental System. It declared the British Islands to be in a state of blockade, and ordered all Englishmen in countries occupied by the French to be seized as prisoners of war. The English Government retaliated by issuing Orders in Council prohibiting trade with France and her allies (1807).

5. Canning Foreign Secretary.—Meantime the Ministry of "All the Talents" had fallen. Grenville proposed to admit Roman Catholics into the army and the navy. This excited the alarm of the King on the point on which he was most nervous. Not content with the withdrawal of the Bill by the Ministry, he dismissed the ministers. The new Premier was the Duke of Portland, and Canning was Foreign Secretary.

6. Seizure of the Danish Fleet.—Canning saw with alarm the union of Napoleon and the Czar, who, meeting upon a raft in the river Niemen, had concluded there the Treaty of Tilsit. He knew that Napoleon meant to seize the fleets of Denmark and Portugal, and use them in his designs on England. With all speed and secrecy, therefore, he sent out an expedition to Denmark, under Admiral Gambier and Lord Cathcart. On the refusal of the Danes to surrender their fleet, shot and shell

began to fall on Copenhagen with such devastating fury that the whole city seemed wrapped in flames. Opening on the 2nd of September 1807, the fire continued for six days till the evening of the 5th, when it finally ceased. A total of 14 ships were surrendered.

New Words in this Lesson.

C n-f d- on-tem-p-r-i-s de-crip-tion	dev-as-tat-ing mag-nif-i-cent nerv-ous	re-tal-i-ät-ed se-cre-cy suc-cumbed with-draw-al	tes-ti-fied un-nat-u-rally
--	--	---	-------------------------------

Notes and Meanings.

- 1 Ulm, in Wurtemberg on the Danube, south-east of Stuttgart.
- 2 Succumbed to, yielded to; sank under.
- 3 Confederation of the Rhine, a league of German States. [Leipsic.]
- 4 Retaliated, returned like for like.
- 5 River Niemen, or Memel, near the Russian frontier of Prussia, and flowing into the Baltic.
- 6 Devastating, destroying.

Questions:—1. How did Napoleon break up the third coalition? 2. When did Pitt die? Who became Prime Minister? When did Fox die? 3. By whom was the fourth coalition formed? How did Napoleon punish Prussia for opposing him? 4. What was the Berlin Decree? How did England retaliate? 5. What led to the fall of Grenville's Ministry? 6. How did Canning frustrate Napoleon's designs on the Danish fleet?

56. THE PENINSULAR WAR.

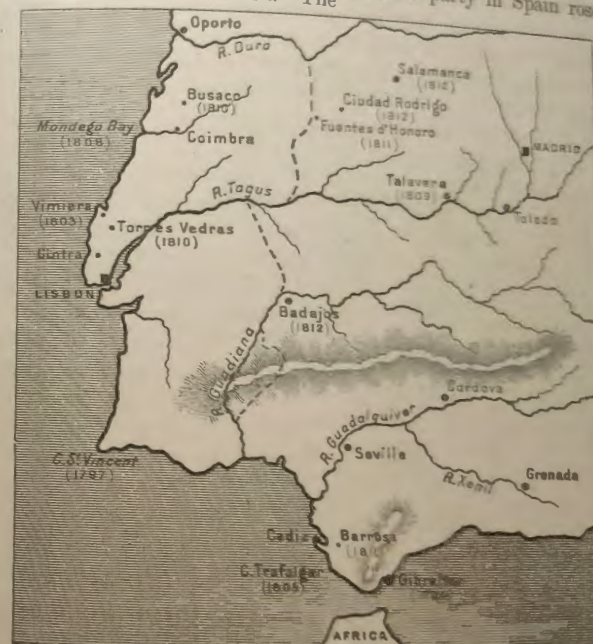
1. **Napoleon master of Portugal.**—Portugal, which had always been the faithful ally of England, was reluctant to accept the Berlin Decree. Napoleon, annoyed by this show of spirit, resolved to crush the little country by a single blow. He sent General Junot with thirty thousand men to take possession of Lisbon. On his approach, the Prince Regent and the royal family of Portugal sailed to Brazil. Junot then occupied Portugal in the name of the French Emperor.

2. **Napoleon master of Spain.**—Meanwhile a quarrel was disturbing the royal family of Spain. Ferdinand, the heir-apparent to the crown, had quarrelled with his father, Charles IV. Partly by trick and partly by threat, both father

THE PENINSULAR WAR.

and son were induced to resign all their rights to the throne into the hands of Napoleon. He then made his brother Joseph, who had for some time held the throne of Naples, King of Spain.

3. Battle of Vimiera.—The National party in Spain rose

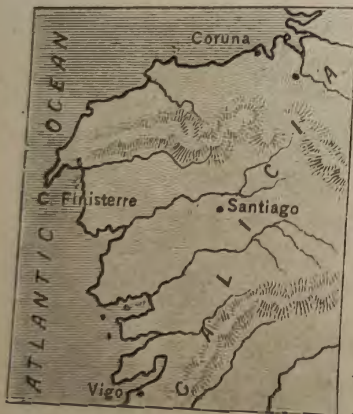


in arms against this usurpation, and appealed to England for help. Hence arose the Peninsular War, in which Napoleon's ambition received its first serious check. Sir Arthur Wellesley, already distinguished in Indian wars, was sent to Portugal with a force of about a thousand men. Landing at Mondego Bay in Portugal, he defeated Marshal Junot at the 21st of August.

4. **Moor's Retreat.**—Through jealousy at home, Wellesley was recalled. His successor, Sir Hew Dalrymple, allowed the French to evacuate Portugal with all their arms and war

stores. This foolish lenience cost Sir Hew his command, and Sir John Moore took his place. Misled by Spanish promises, Moore marched his army into the heart of Leon; but there he received the alarming news that Napoleon was master of Madrid, and that Marshal Soult was marching to attack the English army. There was no course open to the English leader but a retreat towards the shore of Galicia.

5. **Corunna.**—When the English, famished and rag-clad, reached Corunna, their ships had not yet arrived, and 1809 Soult was close upon them. Facing round, they moved to meet him, and won a brilliant victory. Moore, killed



by a cannon-ball, was buried on the ramparts of Corunna "with his martial cloak around him" (January 16).

6. **Talavera.**—Sir Arthur Wellesley again took command of the army. Invading Spain, he won a great battle at Talavera on the banks of the Tagus (July 28). For this victory he was created Viscount Wellington. But the approaches to Madrid being covered by three French armies, he was obliged to fall

back on the frontiers of Portugal.

7. **Busaco: Torres Vedras.**—Portugal was the scene of the next Peninsular campaign. The French strove to drive 1810 the English to their ships; but in the Battle of Busaco (September 27) Wellington repulsed Massena with heavy 1809s. Then, retreating to the heights of Torres Vedras, some distance north of Lisbon, he took up an impregnable position, and Massena prudently retreated toward Spain.

8. **Barrosa: Fuentes d'Onoro: Albuera.**—Three important victories marked the fourth campaign in the Peninsula. 1811 Graham defeated Marshal Victor at Barrosa (March 5). Massena was routed by the English at Fuentes d'Onoro (May 5). More decisive still was the victory of Albuera (May 16),

where Soult, marching to relieve the frontier fortress of Badajoz, besieged by Beresford, was repulsed with great slaughter.

9. **Ciudad Rodrigo: Badajoz: Salamanca.**—Wellington invaded Spain for the third time in 1812. Ciudad Rodrigo and Badajoz, great fortresses which guarded the western frontier of Spain, soon fell before him. The 1812 defeat of Marmont at Salamanca (July 22) opened the way to Madrid, into which the victor led his troops on the 12th of August; but the approach of two French armies made it advisable for him to retreat on Portugal.

10. **The First Treaty of Paris.**—Step by step the French were driven toward their own frontier. The decisive 1813 battle was fought at Vittoria in Biscay (June 21). Then Wellington, defeating Soult in the Pyrenees and taking St.



Sebastian, entered France. He scattered the remnant of Soult's army on the 10th of April 1814 in the Battle of Toulouse. Six days earlier, Napoleon, routed in the great Battle of Leipsic, and followed even into Paris by a victorious host of Russians, Swedes, Germans, Austrians, and Prussians, had abdicated the throne of France. The Bourbons returned to Paris and Madrid. On the 30th of May 1814 the First Treaty of Paris was signed. The fallen Emperor retired to the island of Elba.

11. **Wellington's Reward.**—For his great services in the Peninsula, Wellington was made a Duke, was publicly thanked by the Houses of Parliament, and received a grant of £400,000. The allied Sovereigns visited England in June. Toward the close of the year, a Congress met at Vienna to settle the affairs of Europe.

New Words in this Lesson.

ab-di-cāt-ed	am-bi'tion	fam'ished	le-ni-ence
ad-vi's-a-ble	an-noyed'	im-preg-na-ble	u-sur-pa'tion

Notes and Meanings.

- 1 Annoyed, vexed.
- Brazil. It was a dependency of Portugal. The King returned to Portugal in 1821; but his son Don Pedro was crowned as Emperor of Brazil in 1822.
- 3 Vimiera, in Portugal, north of Lisbon.
- 4 Evacuate, quit.
- Lenience, mildness.
- Leon, east of Galicia and the north of Portugal.
- Galicia, in the north-west of Spain.
- 5 Famished, starving with hunger.
- Corunna, on the north-west coast of Galicia.
- 6 Talavera, south-west of Madrid.
- 7 Busaco, north-east of Mondego Bay.
- Torres Vedras, a village north-west of Lisbon. Wellington's line of defence extended from the Tagus to the Atlantic.
- Impregnable, not able to be taken or seized.
- 8 Barrosa, south-east of Cadiz.
- Fuentes d'Onoro, south-west of Ciudad Rodrigo, which is south-west of Salamanca.
- Albuera, south-east of Badajoz.
- 9 Badajoz, on the frontier of Spain and Portugal, and on the river Guadiana.
- 10 Vittoria, in the north-east of Spain.
- St. Sebastian, on the Bay of Biscay, near the French frontier; strongly fortified.
- Toulouse, in the south-west of Leipsic, in Saxony. [France.
- Abdicated, given up; vacated.
- First Treaty of Paris. By this treaty the boundaries of France were to be the same as at January 1, 1792. England retained Malta, Tobago, St. Lucia, and the Isle of France (Mauritius).
- Elba, in the Mediterranean, between Corsica and the coast of Italy.

Questions:—1. Why did Napoleon wish to crush Portugal? 2. How did he become master of Spain? 3. How was England led into the war? Who gained the Battle of Vimiera? 4. What forced Moore to retreat to Galicia? 5. What battle was fought there? 6. What victory did Wellesley win in 1809? 7. Where did Wellington repulse Massena? Where did he take up an impregnable position? 8. What victories were gained in 1811? 9. And in 1812? 10. Where was Soult's army finally scattered? What treaty closed the war? 11. How was Wellington rewarded?

57. ADJUNCTS OF THE WAR.

1. **The Walcheren Expedition.**—To aid Austria in her struggle against Napoleon, the ill-fated Walcheren expedition

was sent to the coast of the Netherlands. Its object was to seize the French batteries on the Scheldt, and destroy the naval works at Antwerp; but on the marshy island of Walcheren disease swept off the troops in thousands, and only a wreck of the splendid force returned to England in December. Canning blamed Castlereagh for this failure, and demanded his dismissal from the Ministry. A duel followed, in which Canning got a slight flesh-wound. This broke up the Ministry, and Spencer Perceval became Prime Minister.

2. **The Burdett Riots.**—During the greater part of the year 1810, the citizens of London were kept in a ferment by the Burdett riots. Sir Francis Burdett, who had revived the question of Parliamentary Reform in the previous year, published a pamphlet in which he spoke contemptuously of the House of Commons. For this he was arrested amid great excitement, his house in London having to be stormed by constables before he could be captured. During all the time that Burdett was confined in the Tower (from April till June), public meetings were held in the chief towns. The prevailing discontent was increased by great commercial distress. Ireland contributed its share to the general confusion, Daniel O'Connell having commenced an agitation for the repeal of the Union. Early in the following year, George, Prince of Wales, was installed as Prince Regent, the King having become incurably insane (1811).

3. **The Luddite Riots.**—The long war had now begun to tell heavily on English commerce, and there were many bankruptcies in London and other cities. An ignorant prejudice against the use of machinery in the cotton manufacture also led to much distress. The Luddites began their destruction of factories at Nottingham in November. The mania soon spread to other manufacturing towns, the rioters supposing that machinery would keep them out of employment. These fanatical outbreaks continued during the next six or seven years, and they were not suppressed until some of the rioters had been brought to the scaffold.

4. **The Prime Minister shot.**—In the spring of 1812 the Premier, Mr. Perceval, was shot in the lobby of the House of

Commons by a merchant named Bellingham, whose business had been ruined by the war. The Earl of Liverpool became Premier, and Viscount Castlereagh Foreign Secretary. Mr. Robert Peel was Chief Secretary for Ireland, and organized in that capacity the new police, which after him received the name of "Peelers."

5. Napoleon's Russian Campaign.—



NAPOLEON BONAPARTE.

While the empire of Napoleon had received a heavy blow in the failure of his Russian campaign. With an army of nearly half a million, he had penetrated the very territory of thezar to its very heart. But the flames of Moscow, kindled in self-defence by the Russians themselves, drove him back. In all history there is nothing more appalling than the story of his retreat. When the winter snow melted, the bodies of four hundred thousand men were found lying between Moscow and the Niemen.

6. War with the United States.—England then became involved in a war with the United States of America. It sprang from two causes—the interruption of commerce by the Orders in Council, and the right of search for deserters from the Royal Navy claimed by England. War was declared in June 1812. An invasion of Canada by the Americans failed. The English captured Washington, and burned the public buildings. The most striking incident of the war, however, was the ocean

duel, by which the latter, though the loser, was taken in fifteen minutes. The Treaty of Ghent (December 14) put an end to the war with France, but before the news of its conclusion had reached America, the English were at New Orleans.

New Words in this Lesson.

ad-juncts	con'sta-bles	in-c 'a-b-y	man-u-fac-tur-ing
ag-i-ta'tion	con-temp'-uous-ly-in-s alled'		man-u-fac-tur-ing
ap-pall'ing	em-ploy-mén	in-er-rup'-on	re-val'g
bank-rupt-cies	fac-tor-les	ma-chin-er-y	re-val'g
ca-pac'i-ty	fa-nat'ic-al	ma'ni-a	esse

Notes and Meanings.

- Walcheren (pronounced *Wal'cher-en*), an island in the province of Zeeland (Holland) between the east and the west cheldt. It is 11 miles long and 10 broad. [manner]
- Contemptuously, in a slighting manner.
- Luddites, so called from *Lud*, an idiot, who broke some frames in a fit of passion. The inventions of Arkwright (water-frame, 1769), Crompton (mule, 1779), and Cartwright (power-loom, 1785), had stimulated the cotton manufacture.
- anania, m dn =; exci en
- 4 Peel, afterwards Sir Robert Peel, twice Prime Minister, born 1788, died 1850.
- 5 Penetrated, pushed his way into.
- 6 Interruption, stoppage.

Questions:—1. Why was the Walcheren Expedition sent out? What was its fate? 2. What were the Burdett riots? When did the Regency begin? 3. What were the Luddite riots? How were they put down? 4. What Prime Minister was shot? When? 5. What were the losses of the French in the Russian campaign? 6. What were the causes of the war with the United States? What treaty ended it?

58. QUATRE BRAS AND LIGNY.

1. Napoleon's Return to France.—The deliberations of the Vienna Congress were suddenly interrupted in March 1815, by the news that Napoleon had quitted Elba. He landed at Cannes, on the southern coast of France, with one thousand men, and marched rapidly on Paris. His marshals hastened to his side. The troops sent against him fraternized with him.

nized with his followers, and ranged themselves under his banner. In twenty days after his landing, he once more held the capital and the throne of France.

2. The Feeling of Europe.—All Europe was enraged at his daring disregard of treaties and of oaths. The Vienna Congress declared him an usurper, an outlaw, and a breaker of the peace of the world. The British Parliament voted a budget of £90,000,000 for his overthrow. The Duke of Wellington took the command of eighty thousand troops. Blücher marshalled one hundred thousand Prussians for the campaign. All offers of negotiation from Napoleon were unheeded, and his only hope lay in instant action.

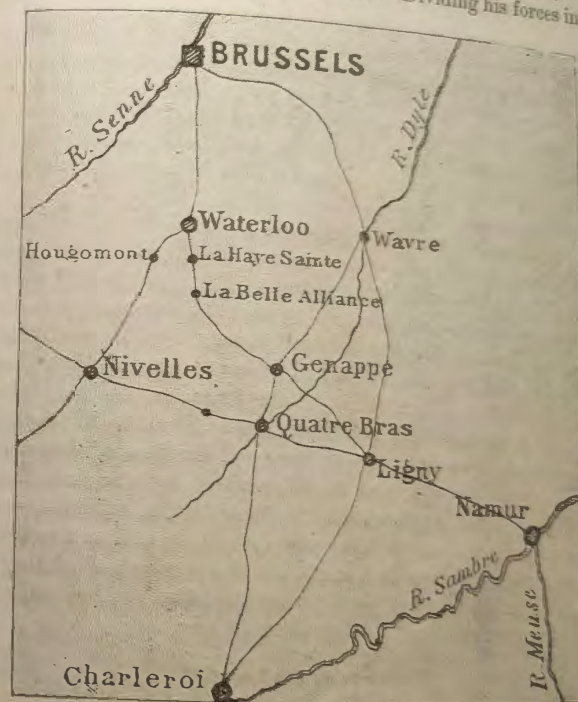
3. Napoleon's critical Position.—Wellington's plan was to join the Prussian army in Belgium, and thence to march rapidly on Paris from the north-east. The Austrians and the Germans were ready to cross the Rhine, while behind them came the Russians in three columns. Other Austrians hurried on with Sardinians from the south-east toward Lyons. These armies numbered together upwards of six hundred thousand men, and they were all marching in converging lines on the French capital.

4. His Policy.—Napoleon resolved, in the first instance, to surprise the allied forces in Belgium. After he had disposed of these in succession, he would give his attention to the remaining armies of Europe. With this view he put forth all his extraordinary energy, and in a marvellously short time massed an army of more than one hundred thousand men on the Belgian frontier, between the Sambre and the Meuse.

5. The British at Brussels.—About three in the morning June 15, on the 15th of June, Napoleon began to move his army in three masses across the Sambre near Charleroi. The Prussians fell back fighting toward the main body, massed about Namur. Wellington remained at Brussels, eager and watchful, until the afternoon of the 15th, when news reached him that the French had crossed the Sambre. Having then made his arrangements for taking up a position at Quatre Bras, twenty miles off, he went calmly to the brilliant ball given in the Belgian capital by the Duchess of Richmond. A hurried whisper passed round among the officers at midnight sent them to their

quarters, and at daybreak the English army began to pour out of Brussels.

6. Quatre Bras.—By seven in the morning on the 16th, Napoleon had matured his plan of action. Dividing his forces into



right wing, left wing, and reserves, he gave the command of the two former to Grouchy and Ney respectively, keeping the last under his own direction. At eleven in the forenoon Ney received orders to occupy Quatre Bras, towards which June 16. Wellington's troops had been pouring all the morning. The battle, which began at two in the afternoon, was on the whole a rehearsal of the greater coming fight; for Ney attacked with guns and cavalry, while Wellington maintained his position by trusting chiefly to his foot, arranged in square.

7. Gallant Picton with his Fighting Fifth came up at a critical moment, when the Prince of Orange had been driven back. Close behind rode the Duke of Brunswick at the head of his Black Hussars. A mortal wound laid him low as he tried to rally his men, somewhat shaken by the hostile horse.

8. Ligny.—At the same time of day, Napoleon in person was engaged with the Prussians at Ligny, whom he drove back, but did not scatter or disorder, after seven hours of hard fighting. A French corps of twenty thousand under D'Erlon spent the day in wandering between the two fields, having been turned from their march to Quatre Bras by a pencil-note requiring their aid at Ligny.

9. Retirement on Waterloo.—As a double fight had distinguished the 16th, so a double retreat distinguished the next day. On the 17th, Blücher, repulsed at Ligny, retreated on a line known to the English, and by nightfall concentrated his army at Wavre. He was followed closely by Grouchy with thirty-two thousand men, who had orders to prevent his union with Wellington. This defeat of the Prussians obliged Wellington to fall back from Quatre Bras to Waterloo, where he had already surveyed the line of country. probably attracted to the position by the fact that Marlborough had once selected it for a battle, which never came off. Even there Blücher was distant from him nearly a day's march; and Napoleon exulted in the prospect of victory; for, as he thought, he had got between the allied armies, and all that now remained was to defeat them in turn.

New Words in this Lesson.

budg-et	de-lib-er-a'tions	Hus-sars'	ma-tured'
con-verg-ing	dis-re-gard'	in-ter-rupt'ed	re-hears'al
corps	ex-ult'ed	mar'shalled	re-spect'ive-ly
crit'ic-al	frat'er-nized	mar'vel-lous-ly	sur-veyed'

Notes and Meanings.

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1 Deliberations, discussions. | miles south of Waterloo. The name |
| 2 Budget, estimate of the ensuing year's expenses. | means four arms,—from the fact |
| 3 Lyons, in the east of France, at the meeting of the Rhone and the Saone. | that two roads cross each other there |
| 4 Marvellously, wonderfully. | 8 Ligny, in Belgium, south-east of Brussels. |
| 5 Quatre Bras (Pron. <i>Katr Brah</i> '), 10 | 9 Waterloo, about 10 miles south of Brussels. |

Questions:—1. How was the Vienna Congress interrupted? 2. What budget did the British Parliament vote? 3. What made Napoleon's position critical? 4. What policy did he adopt? 5. Where were the British troops when he crossed the frontier? 6. What was the nature of the fight for Quatre Bras? 7. Who was killed there? 8. What was the result of the French attack on Ligny? 9. Why was Wellington obliged to fall back on Waterloo?

59.—WATERLOO.

1. Position of the Armies.—The Battle of Waterloo—called by the French St. Jean—was fought on Sunday, the 18th of June. Rain had fallen in torrents during the previous night, and it still continued to drizzle when the troops arose from their comfortless bivouac. The armies faced each other on two gentle slopes, across which ran the high road to Brussels. The army of Wellington numbered seventy-six thousand—that of Napoleon about seventy-eight thousand men. Between, in a slight hollow, lay the farm-house of La Haye Sainte on the British side, and that of La Belle Alliance near the French lines. On an angle of the northern slope, forming the key of the British position, was Hougoumont, an old red-brick chateau: around these three buildings the severest fighting took place.

2. Attack on Hougoumont.—Shortly after eleven o'clock, the first shot was fired from the English guns. The French artillery replied; and then followed such a cannonade as had never been heard on battle-field before. The French battalions dashed on Hougoumont, which was held by the Guards. Around this chateau the battle raged furiously for hours. The French took the wood, broke the gate to pieces, but could not withstand the withering fire from the house, and the rain of shells from English howitzers.

3. Attack on La Haye Sainte.—Marshal Ney led several columns against La Haye Sainte, and gained a temporary lodgment there, because the Germans ran out of ammunition; but their success came too late to be of any use. The circumstance which gave Waterloo a special character, was the trial of strength between the "rocky squares" of English infantry and the torrents of French horse. Wellington's policy was to act on the defensive—to hold the French in check—

until the Prussians should come up. Napoleon's, as we have seen, was if possible to defeat the English before their allies could come to their help.

4. **Appearance of the Prussians.**—About four in the afternoon, the head of the Prussian column under Bulow began to emerge from the wood to the east. Menacing the right flank of the French position, the Prussians obliged Napoleon to risk his last desperate throw for the game, then all but lost. This was the advance of the Old Guard, which had been kept in reserve in the rear of the French lines. As far as the foot of the English position Napoleon led these veterans, who had never failed him yet. "There, gentlemen," he said, pointing to the English lines, "there is the way to Brussels." He had seen his splendid artillery foiled, his splendid cavalry broken, but he still trusted in the Old Guard. "The Old Guard," he said, "never surrenders."

5. **Repulse of the Old Guard.**—On they went under Ney's command up the face of the ridge near La Haye Sainte. On the top of the ridge the English Guards under Maitland and the brigade of Adams, arranged four deep by Wellington himself, lay on the ground, awaiting the attack. When the French were within fifty yards of the top, the English started to their feet and levelled their muskets. Then there was poured in so fearful a fire, that the columns, hampered on their flanks by other attacks, became confused in the act of trying to deploy, and were driven in rout down the hill. "They are mixed!" cried the fallen Corsican, as he rode away to the rear.

6. **The British Advance.**—"Let the whole line advance!" was Wellington's final order, as he galloped to the front. Then the great mass, which with patient resolution had stood on the plateau since early morning with scarce a murmur, now swept grandly forward—infantry, horse, and guns in one imposing rush, which carried every French position, and drove the relics of the Grand Army along wreck-strewn roads toward the frontier of France.

7. **The Losses.**—During the three eventful days (June 16, 17, 18) forty thousand French, sixteen thousand Prussians, thirteen thousand British and Germans were killed. We are told that Wellington was moved to tears as he rode over the

plain by moonlight. But who can tell the thoughts of the fallen despot, as he fled from the field where his mighty sword, stained with the blood and the tears of millions, lay shivered into atoms?

8. **Napoleon's End.**—Paris, where he abdicated in favour of his son; Rochefort, whence he tried to escape to America; the Roads of Aix, where, on the quarter-deck of the *Bellerophon*, he cast himself on the mercy of England; the lonely rock of St. Helena, where for six years he dwelt imprisoned by the Atlantic waves,—these are the last scenes in the history of Napoleon the First. He died on the 3rd of May 1821; and in 1840 his remains were removed to France.

9. **The Second Treaty of Paris.**—Before Waterloo was fought—on the 9th of June 1815—the Congress of Vienna had marked on the map of Europe the changed lines which were to follow the fall of Napoleon. This Treaty of Settlement was followed in November (20th) by the Second Treaty of Paris, which was signed by the Duke of Wellington and Lord Castlereagh on the part of England. By these treaties the Empire of France, distended far beyond its natural limits by the ambition of Napoleon, collapsed into a kingdom similar in size to that of 1790.

10. **Cost of the Victory.**—Thus ended the great life-and-death struggle between Great Britain and France;—for France in humiliation, for Great Britain in triumph; for Europe in peace scarcely broken for forty years. But the cost of the victory was enormous. The British National Debt, which at the end of the American War (1783) had been £268,000,000, had now reached the enormous sum of £880,000,000. But fast as the debt grew, still faster grew the wealth of the cotton-mills, where steam-power had come to the aid of the spinning-frame and the hand-loom.

New Words in this Lesson.

biv'ouac	de-fens-ive	e-vent'-ful	men'-a'-ing
cha-teau'	de-ploy'	how'-itz-ers	pla-teau'
col-lapsed'	dis-tend'-ed	im-pōs'-ing	spin'-ning-frame
com'-fort-less	driz'-zle	lodg'-ment	tem'-po-rar-y

Notes and Meanings.

- 1 St. Jean, from Mont St Jean, a slight eminence in front of Waterloo.
- La Haye Sainte (pron. *La Hay saint*), south of the village of Waterloo, on the road from Waterloo to Quatre Bras. Opposite to it and on the same road, but within the French lines, was the farm-house of La Belle Alliance. Mont St. Jean was between La Haye Sainte and Waterloo.
- Hougoumont, south-west of Waterloo.
- Chateau (*shato*'), country-house.
- 2 Howitzers, light cannon, used for throwing shells. They take effect only at short range, but are easily carried.
- 3 Temporary lodgment, a position held for a time.
- 5 Deploy, to extend from column into line.
- Corsican, Napoleon, who was a native of Corsica.
- 6 Plateau, table-land.
- 8 Rochefort, on the west coast of France.
- Roads of Aix, off the island of Aix; north-west of Rochefort.
- St. Helena, an island in the South Atlantic, 1,200 miles from the coast of Africa. Longwood, where Napoleon resided, is in the interior of the island.
- 9 Distended, swelled; stretched out. Collapsed, shrank; fell in.

Questions:—1. Describe the position of the armies on June 18th. Where did the severest fighting take place? 2. Who defended Hougoumont? 3. Who led the attack on La Haye Sainte? What was Wellington's policy? 4. What forced Napoleon to make his last move? 5. Who led the Old Guard? How was it repulsed? 6. What was Wellington's final order? 7. What were the losses during the three days' fighting? 8. What were the last scenes in Napoleon's history? 9. What was the effect of the Second Treaty of Paris? 10. To what did the British National Debt amount at the end of the war? How was the country able to bear the burden?

60.—THE FIELD OF WATERLOO.

1. There was a sound of revelry by night,
And Belgium's capital had gathered then
Her Beauty and her Chivalry; and bright
The lamps shone o'er fair women and brave men:
A thousand hearts beat happily; and when
Music arose with its voluptuous swell,
Soft eyes looked love to eyes which spake again,
And all went merry as a marriage-bell;—
But hush! hark!—a deep sound strikes like a rising knell!
2. Did ye not hear it?—No; 'twas but the wind,
Or the car rattling o'er the stony street:
On with the dance! let joy be unconfined!
No sleep till morn, when Youth and Pleasure meet
To chase the glowing Hours with flying feet.—

But, hark! that heavy sound breaks in once more,
As if the clouds its echo would repeat;
And nearer, clearer, deadlier than before:—
Arm! arm! it is—it is—the cannon's opening roar!

3. Within a windowed niche of that high hall
Sate Brunswick's fated chieftain: he did hear
That sound the first amid the festival,
And caught its tone with Death's prophetic ear;
And when they smiled because he deemed it near,
His heart more truly knew that peal too well
Which stretched his father on a bloody bier,
And roused the vengeance blood alone could quell:
He rushed into the field, and, foremost fighting, fell.
4. Ah! then and there was hurrying to and fro,
And gathering tears, and tremblings of distress;
And cheeks all pale, which but an hour ago
Blushed at the praise of their own loveliness:
And there were sudden partings, such as press
The life from out young hearts, and choking sighs
Which ne'er might be repeated;—who could guess
If ever more should meet those mutual eyes,
Since upon night so sweet such awful morn could rise?

5. And there was mounting in hot haste: the steed,
The mustering squadron, and the clattering car,
Went pouring forward with impetuous speed,
And swiftly forming in the ranks of war:
And the deep thunder peal on peal afar;
And near, the beat of the alarming drum
Roused up the soldier ere the morning star;
While thronged the citizens with terror dumb,
Or whispering, with white lips, "The foe!—they come! they come!"
6. And wild and high the "Cameron's gathering" rose:
The war-note of Lochiel, which Albyn's hills
Have heard—and heard, too, have her Saxon foes.
How in the noon of night that pibroch thrills
Savage and shrill! But with the breath which fills

The mountain-ide so fill he m un aineer
The native aring which i ti
And Evan's, Demo v of a thousand ear
nald' ame ring in each clan man's ears.

7. An
d Ardenes war sa ove them her green leaves,
Dewy with ature ear-drop as they pas,
rieving, if au h inanimate e er grieves,
Over the unreturning brave—ala
Ere evenino be trodden like the grass
Which now beneath them but above shall grow
In i next verdure when this fiery mass
O' living valour, rolling on the foe,
And burning with high hope, shall moulder cold and low!

8
Las noon beheld them full of lusty life,
Last eve in Beauty' circle proudly gay;
The midnight brought the signal-sound of strife,
The morn the mar halling in arms; the day
Battle' magnificently stern array!
The thunder-cloud clo e o er it, which when rent,
The earth i covered thick with other clay,
Which her own clay shall cover—heaped and pent
Rider and horse, friend, foe, in one red burial blent!

9. There unk the greatest, nor the worst of men
Who e spirit, antithetically mi.t,
One moment of the mightie t, and again
On little objec with like firmne s fir t;
E reme in all things! hadst thou b n b tvit,
Th throne had still b en thin, or n r b n;
For daving made thy ris s fall: th u's kest
n no a to r e sum the imp rial mi n,
And shake ag in th orld, the Thund r r f th sc n

Conqueror and captive of the Earth art thou!
She trembles at thee still, and thy wild name
Was ne'er more bruited in men's minds than now
That thou art nothing, save the jest of Fame,
Who wooed thee once, thy vassal, and became

flatterer of the fier
A god unto thy elf; n
o the astounded k'n
o deemed thee for a t
time whate'er t didst assert.

11. Oh, more or less than man—in high or low,
Battling with nations, flying from the field;
Now making monarchs' necks thy footstool, now
More than thy meanest soldier taught to yield;
An empire thou couldst crush, command, rebuild,
But govern not thy pettiest passion, nor,
However deeply in men's spirits skilled,
Look through thine own, nor curb the lust of war,
Nor learn that tempted Fate will leave the loftiest star.
12. Yet well thy soul ha h brooked e rning e
With that untaught, innate philosophy,
Which, be it wisdom, coldness, or deep pri e,
I gall and wormwood to an enemy.
When the whole ho of hatred ood har by,
To watch and mock thee hrinking, thou has sm e
With a sedate and all-enduring eye
When Fortune fled her poiled and favourite child,
He stood unbowed beneath the ills upon him piled.

LORD BYRON.

New Words in this Lesson.

an-ti-thet-i-cal-ly	dead-li-er	loft-i-est	phil-os'o-phy
as-tound-ed	fes-ti-val	love-li-ness	re-as-sume'
bruit-ed	im-pet-u-ous	mag-nif-i-cent-ly	un-con-fined'
bur-i-al	in-an'i-mate	niche	ver-dure
clat-ter-ing	knell	pet-ti-est	vo-lup-tu-ous

Notes and Meanings.

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1 Revelry, festivity.
Voluptuous, delicious. | the French defeated the Prussians, in 1806. |
| A windowed niche, a recess with a window in it. | 4 Mutual eyes, eyes exchanging glances of love and sympathy. |
| 5 Brunswick's fated chieftain, William-Frederick, Duke of Brunswick. He fell at Quatre Bras, when leading the advanced guard of Wellington's army. His father was killed in the Battle of Auerstadt, in which | 5 Impetuous, furious. |
| | 6 The Camerons' gathering, the pibroch or war-note of the Cameron Highlanders. Cameron of Lochiel was the head of the clan. [Land. Albany's hills, the Highlands of Scot- |

Heard, too, have her Saxon foes.
In the Jacobite rebellions, the
Camerons supported the Stewarts
against the Hanoverians, whom
the Celts called "Saxons." (See
next note.)

Evans, Donald's fame. Evan Cam-
eron commanded under Claver-
house at Killiecrankie. His grand-
son Donald was the first to join
the standard of Charles-Edward in
1745, and was severely wounded
at Culloden.

7 Ardennes, a wood between Water-
8 Blent, mingled. [loo and Brussels.]

9 The greatest, nor the worst of
men, Napoleon I.

Antithetically mixt, made up of
conflicting elements.

Been betwixt, a good medium;
neither so high in some things,
nor so low in others.

Had still been thine, or never
been, either he would have kept
the throne, or he would never
have reached it.

10 Bruited (*brooled*), noised abroad;
Astounded, surprised. [famed.]

12 Brooked the turning tide, borne up
against misfortune.

61.—AFTER THE WAR.

1. Distress in Great Britain.—The Proclamation of Peace was followed by great distress in England. When the excitement of the war was over, people had time to consider its consequences, and were forced to feel them. Commerce was almost completely stagnant. The weight of taxation was excessive, owing to the enormous debt which the country had incurred. Food was scarce, and therefore dear. There was little demand for labour, and therefore wages were low. Nevertheless, 1815 the Government, in order to favour the English farmers and land-owners, passed a Corn Act forbidding the importation of foreign grain until the price of wheat had reached eighty shillings per quarter.

2. Demand for Reform.—This led to riots in the larger towns, which were attended with great destruction of property, especially of machinery, and in some cases with loss of life. Then arose the cry for a reform of the House of Commons, with universal suffrage and annual Parliaments. Political societies called Hampden Clubs were formed all over the country, that in London being presided over by Sir Francis Burdett. The writings of William Cobbett the journalist, who had begun life as a ploughman, had great influence with the tradesmen and labourers of England, whose champion he proclaimed himself to be. The Ministry, influenced by Lord Castlereagh, stood firm in resisting all change.

3. Not a new Demand.—This agitation for Reform, which continued during the next seventeen years, had been in progress before the war began. While the war lasted, the public mind was occupied by its events to the exclusion of nearly every other subject; but when peace came, the question of reform was reopened with all the more keenness because of the national distress and the wide-spread disaffection.

4. Ever since the reign of Queen Anne, the ascendancy of the House of Commons had been undoubted; but the complaint was that that House did not represent the nation. The influence of the Crown, of the Ministry for the time being, and of the chief land-owners, was so great that a large proportion of the representation was in their hands. The younger Pitt had been one of the first to raise the question; but the excesses of the French Revolution led him to abandon reform. The subject was again raised by Sir Francis Burdett in 1809; but he obtained only fifteen supporters. In the following year, he was sent to the Tower by the House of Commons for contempt, and remained there till Parliament was prorogued. It was not till the close of the war that the question of reform really aroused the nation.

5. Signs of Discontent.—The price of wheat continued to rise steadily after the peace. It reached its maximum in 1817—a year of gloom and distress. The Prince-Regent was fired at when returning from the opening of Parliament. No fewer than six hundred petitions for reform—some of 1817 them with thirty thousand signatures—were sent to Parliament. In spite of a Royal Proclamation against rioting and unlawful assemblages, both riots and seditious meetings increased.

6. Burdett's Motion.—The Habeas Corpus Act was suspended; but the riots still continued, and at Derby three of the ringleaders were executed. In May, Burdett introduced in the House of Commons a motion for reform. It obtained only seventy-seven supporters, while two hundred and sixty-five voted for its rejection. Towards the end of the year the death of the Princess Charlotte, only child of the Regent, caused deep national sorrow, and revived for a time the loyalty of the people.

7. **The affair of Peterloo.**—During the next two years the excitement and the discontent continued to spread. In 1818 Burdett's resolution for universal suffrage and annual Parliaments obtained only two votes in the House of Commons. A crisis came in 1819. Riots by the unemployed 1819 were common in the manufacturing towns. Public meetings in favour of Parliamentary Reform were held everywhere. A great meeting held at Smithfield was watched by the military and by six thousand "special constables." In St. Peter's Field, Manchester, one hundred thousand persons assembled to petition for reform. They were dispersed by the military, but not until several had been killed and hundreds wounded. The affair was derisively called the "Battle of Peterloo."

8. **Death of George the Third.**—For writing a letter condemning the "Manchester massacre," Sir Francis Burdett was fined £2,000, and was imprisoned for three months. Parliament met in November and passed Six Acts restricting public liberty. An unusually severe winter added greatly to the sufferings of the poor. In the midst of these troubles the Princess Victoria, daughter of the Duke of Kent, fourth son of the King, was born at Kensington Palace (May 24). On the 23rd January following, the Duke of Kent died; and on the 29th the 1820 old King, blind as well as insane, also breathed his last.

His age was eighty-one, and his reign of sixty years has been the longest in the long list of English Sovereigns.

9. **His Character.**—George the Third was a good man and a wise King. Unlike his predecessors of the same name, he made the glory and the good of Britain his highest objects. In his old age nothing pleased him better than to escape from the noise and smoke of London to his quiet farms; and the name, "Farmer George," by which he was sometimes called, well describes the simple, homely old man, who was known and loved as well in the cottage as in the castle.

New Words in this Lesson.

as-sem'-blag-es	in-curred'	pre-sid'-ed	sig'-na-tures
de-ri'-sive-ly	jour-nal-ist	pro-por'-tion	stag'-nant
dis-af-fec'-tion	keen-ness	re-jec'-tion	suf'-frage
im-por-ta'-tion	max-i-mum	re-strict'-ing	u-ni-ver'-sal

Notes and Meanings.

- 1 Stagnant, at a stand-still.
Importation, bringing into the country.
Price of wheat. During the ten years from 1874 to 1883 the price of wheat averaged 47s. per quarter. During the previous ten years (1864 to 1873) it averaged 52s. 8d. Its highest price since 1815 was 96s. 11d. in 1847. The maximum of the century was 126s. 6d. in 1812.
- 2 Universal suffrage, giving a vote to every citizen.
William Cobbett, born in Surrey in 1765; published the *Weekly Register* for many years, and wrote numerous pamphlets. He died in 1835.
Annual Parliaments, a new Parliament elected every year.
- 5 Maximum, highest point.
- 6 Habeas Corpus Act, passed in 1870. See Lesson 25 § 10. Its suspension enabled suspected persons to be imprisoned without a reason being assigned.
- Princess Charlotte. She was the wife of Prince Leopold, afterwards King of the Belgians (1830); and as the only child of the Prince of Wales, she was heir-apparent to the English throne.
- 7 Derisively, in scorn.
- 8 Six Acts, these were—(1) for the more speedy execution of justice; (2) to prevent military training; (3) to punish profane and seditious libels; (4) for seizing arms; (5) for repressing libels; (6) to prevent seditious meetings and assemblies. Restricting, limiting.

Questions:—1. To what was the distress in England due? How did the Government increase it? 2. What cry then arose? 3. When had the demand been made before? 4. What had been settled since Queen Anne's time? What complaint was made regarding the House of Commons? 5. What signs of discontent appeared in 1817? 6. What was the fate of Burdett's motion? 7. What was the affair of Peterloo? 8. What were the Six Acts? When did George III. die? 9. What was his character?

62. THE BRITISH CONSTITUTION.

1. **A mixed Government.**—The Government of Great Britain, Ireland, and the English Colonies and Dependencies, is vested in the Sovereign and the two Houses of Parliament,—the House of Lords and the House of Commons. It is thus a mixed Government; not pure monarchy, nor pure aristocracy, nor pure democracy, but a compound of all three. In this composite character lies its strength.

2 **The Ministry.**—The chief business of the two Houses of Parliament is to make laws, and to vote money for the public service. The power of administering the laws belongs to the Sovereign; but in practice, this is done in the Sovereign's name by the Ministry,—a body of advisers chosen from both Houses of Parliament. The Ministry is responsible to Parliament for the conduct of affairs, and for the advice it gives to

the Crown; and whenever it ceases to have the confidence of the House of Commons, the Sovereign chooses another body of advisers. Thus Parliament is virtually supreme.

3. **The Sovereign.**—The crown is hereditary, and females are not excluded; but the Sovereign must be a Protestant of the Church of England. The chief prerogatives of the Sovereign are, to make war and peace; and to summon, prorogue, and dissolve Parliament. The assent of the Sovereign is also necessary to every new law. But, as already stated, these prerogatives are now exercised by the Sovereign under the advice of the Ministry for the time being.

4. **The House of Lords.**—The House of Lords, or Upper House of Parliament, comprises 26 Lords Spiritual and 452 Lords Temporal. The Lord Chancellor, sitting on the woolsack, acts as president or chairman of the Lords.

5. **The House of Commons.**—According to the Act of 1884, the House of Commons, or Lower House of Parliament, consists of 670 representatives of counties, boroughs, and universities,—namely, England and Wales, 495; Scotland, 72; and Ireland, 103. The chairman of the Commons is called the *Speaker*, because he is their spokesman or representative in approaching the Sovereign. Any Bill may be introduced in the House of Commons, and money Bills can originate in that House alone.

6. **The Electors.**—The Electors are, both in *boroughs* and in *counties*, householders rated for relief of the poor, lodgers occupying rooms valued at £10 a year unfurnished, and persons in service who occupy free houses as part of their remuneration.

7. **Progress of a Bill.**—The process of law-making is conducted as follows:—The proposed law is introduced in either House in the form of a Bill, after leave has been given so to do. It is then read for the *first time*, without opposition. The Bill is then printed, and a day is fixed for the *second reading*. If it pass the second reading, the House proceeds to consider and vote upon each clause in the Bill separately “in committee.” After the Bill has passed through committee, it is “reported” to the House in its amended form, and is ready for the *third reading*. If it pass this reading, it is then sent to the other House. There it goes through an exactly similar process;

three readings, with examination in committee between the second and the third. If amended or altered there, the Bill is sent back to the House in which it originated, which either agrees to the amendments or not, and may ask for a conference with the other House to settle differences. When the Bill has finally passed both Houses, the royal assent is required before it can become an Act or law. This is given either personally or by commission.

8. **The Privy Council.**—From very early times, the advisers of the Sovereign have been known as the Privy Council. As this body was found to be too numerous, it became customary, after the Revolution of 1688, to intrust the government to a committee of the Privy Council, called the Ministry.

9. **The Prime Minister.**—The head of the Ministry is the Prime Minister, or Premier. The Sovereign chooses as Prime Minister the recognized leader of that political party which has the majority in the House of Commons for the time, and intrusts him with the task of forming a Ministry from among his own supporters.

10. **The Cabinet.**—The chief ministers form the Cabinet, which determines the general policy of the Ministry, and the measures which are to be proposed to Parliament. The Cabinet consists of the Prime Minister or First Lord of the Treasury, the Lord Chancellor, the Chancellor of the Exchequer, the five Principal Secretaries of State, and the President of the Privy Council. Other ministers are also sometimes included in the Cabinet, but that body does not usually consist of more than fourteen or fifteen members.

11. **Meetings of Parliament.**—Parliament meets usually in February, and the session lasts till the beginning of August, with short interruptions at Whitsuntide and Easter. Each House of Parliament may adjourn its meetings from day to day. The Sovereign, advised by the Ministry, prorogues Parliament from session to session; and dissolves it, when a new Parliament is to be elected. The duration of a Parliament is limited by law to seven years.

12. **Government of the Colonies.**—The Colonies and Dependencies have their internal affairs administered by resident Governors and Councils, appointed by the Crown, and con-

A HIGHLAND MARCHING SONG.
 The Secretary of State, who is a member of
 the Government, is in each a legislative assembly elected by
 the people, the

New Words in this Lesson.

ad-min'-is-ter-ing	com'-pos-ite	in-ter-nal	Spir'-it-u-al
a-mend'-ments	de-moc'-ra-cy	proc'-ess	spokes'-man
ar-is-toc'-ra-cy	De-pend'-en-cies	re-mu-ner-a'-tion	Tem'-por-al
bor'-oughs	ex-am-i-na'-tion	res-i-dent	wool'-sack

Notes and Meanings.

- are 1 self-governing
 1 Dependencies, such as India, which
 2 Hereditary, handed down from par-
 3 Prerogatives, powers.
 4 Lords spiritual, archbishops and
 5 Remuneration, pay; wages.
 6 Amendments, changes.
 Questions:—1. Show how the British Constitution is a mixed Government.
 2. What is the Ministry? 3. What are the powers of the Sovereign?
 4. Who compose the House of Lords? Who is chairman? 5. Who compose the
 House of Commons? Who is chairman? 6. Who are the Privy Counsellors? 7. Describe the
 progress of a Bill. 8. Who form the Privy Council? 9. Who are the Ministers?
 Ministry? 10. What is the Cabinet? 11. Explain a dissolution, applied to Parliament. What is a bill? 12. How are the Colonies governed?

63. A HIGHLAND MARCHING SONG.

(BY PERMISSION OF THE AUTHOR.)

Now we're ready for the march,
 Slope your arms, and step together!
 Chorus—Agus O, Mhó ag!
 Hó-ró! marc together!
 Agus O, Mhó ag!

Keep your fours, and march in order,
 Singing chorus and march together.

Look! our path leads an
 k not d n', or round about you:

A HIGHLAND MARCHING SONG.

He that wears a kilt should be
 Erect and free as deer on heather.

When he hears the bagpipe sound,
 His heart should bound like steed for battle.

Think of them who went before us
 Winning glory for the tartan!

2. Vainly did the mighty Roman
 Check the Caledonian valour;

[79-410 A.D.]

Still from each unconquered glen
 Rose the men no yoke could fetter.

With the Bruce they drew the sword,
 On the gory field of Bannock.

[1314.]

In the ranks of great Gustavus,
 With the bravest they were reckoned.

[1629-32.]

'Neath the banners of Montrose
 Like a storm-cloud swept the tartan;

[1644-46.]

And when fell Dundee victorion
 On Rinvory's blood-tained heather.

[1690.]

3. On the field of Fontenoy
 They held nobly up their banner.

[1745.]

In the top of Royal Charlie
 Many a laur l did they gather,

[1745-46.]

From the rout on Prater's brae
 Till the day of black Culloden:

And in Fortune's dark hour
 A lo r r und him did they rally.

[1746.]

Thy green ear long fresh for ever.
 Keeps their g

[1746.]

A HIGHLAND MARCHING SONG.

- At Quebec their pibroch shrill
Up the hill went breathing terror. [1759]
4. On the sands of Aboukir [1801.
Rang their cheer 'mid hail of bullets.
- When Sir Ralph, the good and brave, [1801.
On Iskandria's plain was stricken,
- Heedless of life's ebbing tide,
He stood beside his Forty-Second.
- Many were their deeds of arms
'Gainst the swarms of Hyder Ali.
- The grim fort of Savendroog [1791.
They refused not to adventure;
- And the dizzy rock they scaled,
Which none dared before or after :
5. 'Leaguered close in Mangalore, [1783-84.
Tippoo and his hordes they baffled :
- And the Sahib's cruel power
'Neath Seringa's towers they buried. [1799.
- First of many a field of war,
Where great Arthur ruled the battle,
- Do their colours tell the tale
Of the famous fight of Assaye. [1803.
- So the story is of Maida, [1806.
Where the pride of France they levelled.
- On Corunna's bloody shore, [1809.
Their onset gladdened Moore in dying;
6. And on many a field of Spain,
To their ancient fame they added :

A HIGHLAND MARCHING SONG.

- Talavera, Fuentes d'Onor, [1809; 1811.
Vittoria, Salamanca ! [1813; 1812.
- Badajoz, Ciudad Rodrigo, [1812.
Pyrenees, and San Sebastian ! [1813.
- When they crossed the Bidasoa,
Still before them Soult retreated : [1813.
- Nivelle, Nive, Orthez, Toulouse— [1813-14.
Scarce the Muse their steps can follow !
- On the slopes of Quatre Bras, [1815.
The Frenchmen saw them stand unbroken.
- On the day of Waterloo [1815.
The pibroch blew where fire was hottest.
7. When the Alma heights were stormed, [1854.
Foremost went the Highland bonnets ;
- And before their "thin red line"
The Cossack rider turned and vanished. [1854.
- When on India's burning plains [1857-58.
Dearly saved was Britain's honour,
- Outram, Havelock, and Clyde,
Led the Highlanders to conquest.
- Joyful rang the pibroch loud [1857-58.
Through the sounding streets of Lucknow ;
- And like angels sent to save
Came the brave ones to the rescue.
8. When Ashantee's savage lord [1874.
Loosed his dusky hordes for havoc,
- Through Atlanti's horrid wood
In order good they led the battle ;

And their stately tramp awakened
Thy forsaken streets, Coomassie !

[1874.]

When we smote the Afghan bold,
As of old there shone the tartan :

[1880.]

From Cabul to Candahar,
Glorious was the march with Roberts :

Nor shall he that war who ruled,
Donald Stewart, be forgotten !

9. On Egyptian sands they bore,
Yet once more, the brunt of battle ;

Rushing, with terrific cheer,
On Tel-el-Kebir resistless ;

[1882.]

As the Red Sea's mountain tide
Swept o'er Pharaoh's pride triumphant !

As it was in days of yore,
So the story shall be ever :

Where the doughtiest deeds are dared,
Shall the Gael be forward pressing :

Where the Highland broad-sword waves,
There shall graves be found the thickest.

10. But when they have sheathed the sword,
Then their glory is to succour ;

Hearts that scorn the thought of fear
Melt to tears at touch of pity ;

Hands that fiercest smite in war
Have the warmest grasp for brothers ;

And beneath the tartan plaid
Wife and maid find gentlest lover.

Think, then, of the name ye bear,
Ye that wear the Highland tartan !

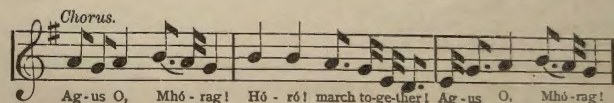
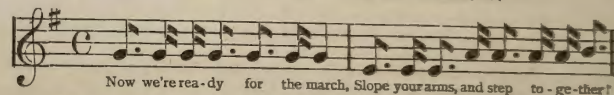
Jealous of its old renown,
Hand it down without a blemish !
Agus O, Mhórag !
Hó-ró ! march together !
Agus O, Mhórag !

ALEXANDER NICOLSON.

Notes.

- 1 Agus O, Mhórag ! Pron. *Agus O, Voerak* ; And, O thou little Marion ! The Gaelic words are the refrain of a song in praise of Prince Charlie by Alexander Macdonald, the Highland poet of the 'Forty-five. Both the chorus and the air of that song have been borrowed for the present

one. In this song there is also an imitation of the peculiar rhyme of Gaelic poetry, namely, assonance, seen in the correspondence of the accented vowel sounds in "march" and "arms," in "order" and "chorus," in "proudly" and "down," etc. The air is as follows:—



- 2 Rinrory, the level ground at the head of the pass of Killiecrankie.
3 Ticonderoga, south of Lake Champlain, in North America. [andria.
4 Iskandria, the Arabic name of Alex-Savendroog, south-west of Bangalore, in Mysore. The fortress, which is built on a rock-plateau half a mile in perpendicular height, and 8 or 10 miles in circumference, was deemed impregnable until its capture by the British, without the loss of a man, in 1791.
5 Seringa's towers, Seringapatam, then the capital of Mysore.
Great Arthur, Arthur, Duke of Wellington. He was present at the Siege of Seringapatam. Assaye (in Berar) was the first battle in which he had the chief command.

Maida, in Southern Italy.

- 6 Talavera, Fuentes d'Onor, etc., battles in the Peninsular War.
Nivelle, Nive, rivers in the south-west of France—the latter a tributary of the Adour—crossed by Wellington in November and December 1813.
Orthes, north-west of Pau. Wellington defeated Soult here, February 26th, 1814. The Battle of Toulouse was fought April 10th.
7 "Thin red line." The *Times* correspondent (W. H. Russell), describing the Battle of Balaklava, spoke of the Highlanders drawn up in line to receive a charge of Cossack or Russian cavalry, as "that thin red streak topped with a line of steel."
8 Coomassie, capital of Ashantee.

SUMMARY OF EVENTS SINCE THE DEATH OF GEORGE III.

GEORGE IV.

Born 1762 A.D.—Son of George III.—Married Caroline of Brunswick
—Reigned 1820-1830 A.D.

1820. Lord Liverpool continues Premier—The Cato Street Plot, to murder the Ministers: Thistlewood and four others executed—*Bill of Pains and Penalties* against Queen Caroline—The Bill is abandoned.
1821. Death of Queen Caroline—Demand for Parliamentary Reform, Free Trade, and Roman Catholic Emancipation.
1822. Lord John Russell's motion for Reform rejected—Suicide of the Marquis of Londonderry (Lord Castlereagh)—Canning Foreign Secretary; Peel Home Secretary.
1824. Burmese War—Tenasserim and Arracan annexed (1826)—*Mechanics' Institutes* first established.
1825. Commercial crisis, the result of speculating in joint-stock companies—Combinations of workmen made lawful.
1827. Illness of Lord Liverpool—George Canning Prime Minister—Death of Canning—Lord Goderich Prime Minister—Destruction of the Turkish fleet at Navarino, by England, France, and Russia.
1828. Wellington Prime Minister, Peel Home Secretary—*Repeal of the Test and Corporation Acts*—Daniel O'Connell is elected for County Clare—London University opened.
1829. Passing of the *Roman Catholic Relief Act*, by Wellington and Peel.
1830. Death of George IV.

WILLIAM IV.

Born 1765 A.D.—Son of George III.—Married Adelaide of Saxe-Meiningen—Reigned 1830-1837 A.D.

1830. Second Revolution in France—Revolution in Belgium: Prince Leopold made King—Opening of the first locomotive railway, Liverpool and Manchester: Death of Mr. Huskisson—Earl Grey Prime Minister.
1831. Two Reform Bills failures—Third Bill opposed by the Lords—First appearance of cholera.
1832. Grey resigns because the King opposes a creation of Peers—Wellington falls to form a Ministry—Grey is recalled—*The Reform Act* is passed.

SUMMARY OF EVENTS

211

1833. Meeting of the first Reformed House of Commons—*Statutes of Henry* in the British possessions—Royal Commission on the Reform of the Criminal Code.
1834. Reform of the Poor Laws. Local boards placed under Government—Viscount Melbourne Prime Minister—Ministers are dismissed—Peel Prime Minister—Dissolution of Parliament—Whig majority—Bulwer Prime Minister again.
1835. Passing of the *Municipal Reform Act*.
1837. Death of William IV.

VICTORIA.

Born May 24, 1819 A.D.—Daughter of the Duke of Kent, and granddaughter of George III.—Married Albert of Saxe-Coburg-Gotha—Has reigned since 1837 A.D.

1837. Lord Melbourne continues Prime Minister—Separation of the Crown of England and Hanover—Rebellion in Canada—*Canada Trade Act* (passed in 1840).
1838. Formation of the Anti-Corn-Law League by Cobden and Bright—The "People's Charter" is adopted by the Chartists.
1839. Appointment of Committee of the Privy Council on Education—War in Afghanistan, to replace Shah Shoojah on the throne—Candahar and Cabul taken—*Massacre of the English in the Khyber Pass* (1842)—Avenged by General Pollock.
1840. War with Mehemet Ali—Acres taken by Nagpur—Treaty with China about the opium trade—Hong-kong given up to England (1842).
1841. Sir Robert Peel Prime Minister.
1842. Peel's *Sliding-Scale Act*, regulating the price of corn, is passed—The Income-tax is first imposed—Peel's New Tariff reduces duties on the raw material of manufactures.
1843. Demands for Repeal of the Union in Ireland—"Robert Emmet" against toll-bars, in Wales—Battle of Meenane; annexation of Sindh.
1845. Sikh War—Victories of Moodkee and Ferozshah—Potato blight in Ireland, followed by famine and fever.
1846. Victory of Sohraon: *Treaty of Lahore*—*Repeal of the Corn Laws*—Lord John Russell Prime Minister.
1847. Monetary panic and commercial crisis—Responsible government granted to Canada, Nova Scotia, and New Brunswick.
1848. The Third French Revolution—Disturbances in Ireland—Second Sikh War—Battle of Goojerat—The Punjab annexed (1849).
1851. First Great Exhibition of Industry at London—Discovery of gold in Australia, and rapid growth of the Colonies.
1852. The Earl of Derby Prime Minister—Death of the Duke of Wellington—The Earl of Aberdeen forms a Coalition Ministry—Remission of party taxes in Mr. Gladstone's first Budget.
1854. England and France aid Turkey against Russia, and the Crimean War begins—Victory of the Alma—Siege of Sebastopol—Battle of Balaclava and Inkermann—Resignation of Lord Aberdeen—Lord Palmerston Prime Minister.
1855. Capture of Sebastopol—Bombardment of Sveaborg—*Treaty of Paris* (1856).
1856. New war with China—By the *Treaty of Tientsin* all China is opened to Europeans (1858)—Commercial treaty with Japan.

1857. Outbreak of the Indian Mutiny at Meerut—Siege of Delhi—Massacre of Cawnpore—Siege and relief of Lucknow.
 1858. Fall of Bareilly, and end of the Mutiny—Lord Palmerston resigns—Lord Derby Prime Minister—The East India Company is extinguished, and the government of India is transferred to the Crown—Admission of Jews to Parliament.
 1859. Defeat of the Derby Government—Lord Palmerston Prime Minister—Beginning of the Volunteer movement.
 1860. New war with China—Cession of Kowloon to England.
 1861. Civil War in America (till 1865)—The Trent affair; Mason and Sledge arrested, but afterwards released—Death of Albert, the Prince Consort (married to Queen Victoria in 1840).
 1862. The Alabama difficulty: a Confederate cruiser built in England—Cotton-famine in Lancashire—Relief fund of £1,000,000 raised.
 1865. Death of Lord Palmerston—Earl Russell Prime Minister—The Fenian plot in Ireland—Arrest and escape of James Stephens.
 1866. The Habeas Corpus Act suspended in Ireland—Lord Derby Prime Minister.
 1867. Fenian outrages at Manchester and Clerkenwell—Second Reform Act: Household Franchise in Boroughs—Dominion of Canada proclaimed (July 1).
 1868. Mr. Disraeli Prime Minister—Abyssinian War: Storming of Magdala—Defeat of the Conservatives at the General Election—Mr. Gladstone Prime Minister—Telegraphs purchased by the Government.
 1869. Disestablishment of the Irish Church.
 1870. First Irish Land Act—English Elementary Education Act.
 1871. Religious Tests abolished in the English Universities—Purchase in the Army abolished by Royal Warrant—Treaty of Washington (on Alabama difficulty).
 1872. The Ballot Act—Scottish Elementary Education Act—Murder of Lord Mayo, Viceroy of India.
 1874. Ashantee War: Coomassie taken and destroyed—The Fiji Islands annexed—The Liberals defeated at the General Election—Mr. Disraeli's Second Ministry—Lay Patronage in the Church of Scotland abolished.
 1876. Queen Victoria proclaimed Empress of India—Mr. Disraeli becomes Earl of Beaconsfield.
 1877. War between Russia and Turkey.
 1878. Berlin Congress and Treaty—Invasion of Afghanistan from India—War in Zululand.
 1880. The Conservatives defeated at the General Election—Mr. Gladstone's Second Ministry—Transvaal War.
 1881. Disturbances in Ireland—Coercive measures passed—Death of Lord Beaconsfield—Second Irish Land Act—Suppression of the Land League.
 1882. Assassination of Lord Frederick Cavendish in Dublin—Prevention of Crimes Act—Obstruction in the House of Commons—Military revolt in Egypt—English victory at Tel-el-Kebir.
 1883. Revolt of native tribes in the Soudan, under the Mahdi.
 1884. General Gordon is sent to relieve Khartoum, and has to defend himself there—Third Reform Act: Household Franchise in Counties.
 1885. Expedition to relieve Gordon—Khartoum taken by the Mahdi, and Gordon killed—Dispute with Russia as to Afghan Frontier, settled peaceably—The Gladstone Ministry defeated on the Budget—The Marquis of Salisbury Prime Minister.

CHIEF DATES.

HOUSE OF STEWART.—1603 TO 1714 A.D.

James I.	1603-1625	Richard Cromwell Protector....	1658
Union of the Crowns.....	1603	Monk enters London	1660
Hampton Court Conference.....	1604	The Restoration.....	1660
Gunpowder Plot.....	1605	Charles II.	1660-1685
Contest between King and Parliament begins	1610	Execution of Argyle.....	1661
Authorized Version of the Bible..	1611	Corporation Act.....	1661
Execution of Raleigh.....	1618	Act of Uniformity.....	1662
Lord Bacon degraded.....	1621	Conventicle Act.....	1664
Charles I.	1625-1649	The Great Plague.....	1665
Petition of Right	1628	Five Mile Act.....	1665
Assassination of Buckingham ...	1628	Battle of Rullion Green	1666
Charles in Scotland.....	1633	The Great Fire	1666
Ship-money revived.....	1634	Dutch Fleet in the Thames.....	1667
Laud's Service-Book	1637	Dismissal of Clarendon	1667
Trial of John Hampden.....	1637	The Cabal Ministry.....	1667-73
The National Covenant.....	1638	Secret Treaty of Dover.....	1670
The Long Parliament meets.....	1640	The Test Act.....	1673
Execution of Strafford.....	1641	The Popish Plot.....	1678
Attempted arrest of the Five Members.....	1642	The Exclusion Bill.....	1680
The Civil War begins.....	1642	The Habeas Corpus Act.....	1679
The Solemn League and Covenant	1643	Murder of Archbishop Sharpe....	1679
The Scots enter England.....	1644	Battle of Drumclog.....	1679
Battle of Marston Moor.....	1644	Battle of Bothwell Bridge.....	1679
Execution of Laud.....	1645	The Rye-House Plot.....	1683
Battle of Naseby.....	1645	Death of Russell and Sidney.....	1683
Battle of Philiphaugh.....	1645	James II.	1685-1688
Charles surrenders to the Scots...	1646	Argyle lands in Scotland.....	1685
Transferred to the Parliament....	1647	His execution.....	1685
Imprisonment in Carisbrooke	1647	Monmouth lands in England.....	1685
Pride's Purge.....	1648	Battle of Sedgemoor.....	1685
Execution of the King.....	1649	Execution of Monmouth.....	1645
The Commonwealth	1649-1660	The Bloody Assize.....	1685
Charles II. in Scotland	1650	Trial of the Seven Bishops.....	1688
Battle of Dunbar.....	1650	Arrival of William of Orange ...	1688
Charles II. crowned at Scone.....	1651	Flight of the King.....	1688
Battle of Worcester.....	1651	Declaration of Right.....	1689
Charles escapes to France.....	1651	William and Mary	1689-1702
Sack of Dundee.....	1653	Bill of Rights.....	1689
Long Parliament expelled.....	1653	Battle of Killiecrankie.....	1689
Barebone's Parliament.....	1653	Siege of Londonderry.....	1689
Oliver Cromwell Protector. 1653-1658		Battle of the Boyne.....	1690
Peace with Holland.....	1654	Massacre of Glencoe.....	1692
		The Triennial Act.....	1694
		Death of Queen Mary.....	1694

214	Home	16 5	Capture of Gibraltar	1704
The Friends	1697	Battle of Ramillies	1706	
Treaty of Ryswick	169	Union of England and Scotland	1707	
Engl'n in ter	1701	Battle of Oudenarde	1708	
of Settlement		Battle of Malplaquet	1709	
	1702-1714	Trial of Acheverell	1709	
App	1702	Harley Prime Minister	1710	
Godolphin Prime Minister	1702-13	Creation of Tory Peers	1712	
of Spanish Accession	1704	Treaty of Utrecht	1713	
Act of Security	1704	Shrewsbury Prime Minister	1714	
title of Blenheim				

II

George I.....	1714-1727	Outbreak at Boston.....	1775-82
<i>Townshend Prime Minister</i>	1714	The American War.....	1775-82
Jacobite Rebellion in cotland.....	1715	Declaration of Independence.....	1776
Battles of Sheriffmuir and Preston.....	1715	Capitulation of Saratoga.....	1777
<i>Walpole Prime Minister (1)</i>	1715	Siege of Gibraltar.....	1779-82
The Septennial Act.....	1716	Capitulation of Yorktown.....	1781
<i>Chope Prime Minister</i>	1717	<i>Rockingham Prime Minister (2)</i>	1782
<i>Sunderland Prime Minister</i>	1718	<i>Shelburne Prime Minister</i>	1782
The South Sea Scheme.....	1720	Independence of the United States	
<i>Walpole Prime Minister (2)</i>	1721	acknowledged.....	1782
George II.....	1727-1760	Treaty of Versailles.....	1783
The Porteous Mob.....	1736	<i>Portland Prime Minister (1)</i>	1783
The Spanish War.....	1739-48	<i>Pitt Prime Minister (1)</i>	1783
<i>Wilmington Prime Minister</i>	1742	Indian Board of Control.....	1784
<i>Pelham Prime Minister (1)</i>	1743	Death of Charles-Edward.....	1788
Battle of Dettingen.....	1743	The French Revolution.....	1789
Jacobite Rebellion in Scotland.....	1745	War with France.....	1793
Battle of Prestonpans.....	1745	Mutiny at the Nore.....	1797
<i>Bath Prime Minister</i>	1746	Battle of the Nile.....	1798
<i>Pelham Prime Minister (2)</i>	1746	Union of Great Britain and Ireland.....	1801
Battle of Culloden Moor.....	1746	<i>Addington Prime Minister</i>	1801
Treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle.....	1748	Peace of Amiens.....	1802
<i>Newcastle Prime Minister (1)</i>	1754	<i>Pitt Prime Minister (2)</i>	1804
Seven Years' War.....	1756-63	Napoleon Emperor.....	1804
<i>Devonshire (with Pitt) Prime Minister</i>	1756	Battle of Trafalgar.....	1805
<i>Newcastle (with Pitt) Prime Minister (2)</i>	1757	<i>Lord Grenville Prime Minister</i>	1806
Battle of Plassey.....	1757	Death of Pitt and of Fox.....	1806
Surrender of Quebec.....	1759	<i>Portland Prime Minister (2)</i>	1807
George III.....	1760-1820	The Peninsular War.....	1808-13
<i>Bute Prime Minister</i>	1762	<i>Perceval Prime Minister</i>	1809
Treaty of Paris.....	1763	The Regency.....	1811
<i>George Grenville Prime Minister</i>	1763	<i>Liverpool Prime Minister</i>	1812
The American Stamp Act.....	1765	Napoleon's Russian Campaign.....	1812
<i>Rockingham Prime Minister (1)</i>	1765	Battle of Toulouse.....	1814
<i>Grafton (with Chatham) Prime Minister</i>	1766	Napoleon in Elba.....	1814
<i>North Prime Minister</i>	1770	First Treaty of Paris.....	1814
		Vienna Congress.....	1814
		Return of Napoleon.....	1815
		Battle of Waterloo.....	1815
		Second Treaty of Paris.....	1815

WORDS CONTAINED IN THE BOOK.

I.—WORDS OF STANDARD III AND IV.
(FOR REVISAL.)

Ex. 4.

Ab'sence	ar-rest'-ed
ac-cēs-sion	ar-riv-al
ac-ci-dent	ar-ti-cles
ac-com'pan-ied	ar-til'-ler-y
ac-com-plished	as-cend'
ac-cord-ing-ly	as-sem-bly
ac-cus-tomed	as-sent'
ac-tu-al-ly	as-sert-ed
ad-di-tion	as-sist-ance
ad-dress-es	at-tach-ed'
ad-mis-sion	at-tack-ed'
a-dopt-ed	at-tempt-ed

Ex. 5.

ad-van'tage
ad-vis'er
af-fect-ing
ag'o-ny
a-gree-ment
al-le-giance
al-li'ance
añ-chor
añ-cient
añ-gle
an-swer
aux'ious

at-tend'ants
at-ten'tion
Au-gust
au-thor'i-ty
a-void-ing

Bañ-quet-ing
bar'tered
ba'is
bat'ter-ie
bat'ter-ing-ram
bea-con

Ex. 6.

ap-peal' ap-pear'-ance ap-peace' ap-plied' ap-point'-ed ap-pren-tic-es ap-proach'-ing ap-prôv'-al ap-prôved' arch-bish-op ar-range-ment ar-rang-ing

Ex. 7.

bride-e-lect'
brill-i-ant
bur-th
bur-ghers
bus-i-ness
but-cher-s

Can'-vas
cap-i-tal
cap-tured
car'-cas -e
Ca-the'-dral

Ex.

cau-ti-ou *ly*
 Cav-a-li-er
 cav-al-ry
 cen-tre
 chal-lenge
 cham-ber
 cham-pi-on
 chap-el
 char-ac-ter
 cher-ish
 chief-tain
 Chiv-al-ry

E. 9.

Chri-ti-an
cit-i-zen
clay-more
cler-gy-men
cli-mate
col-o-ny
col-umn
com-fort-a-bly
com-mand'er
com-menced'
com-merce
com-mis'-sion-ers

Ex. 10.

com-mit'-ted
Com'-mon-ers
com'-pact
com'-pan'-ion
com'-pan-y
com-pelled'
com-plete'-ly
con-ceit'
con-cerned'
con-clud'-ed
con-demned'
con-fes'-in

Ex. 11.

con-firm'ed
con-fu-sion
con-gre-ga-tion
con-nect-ed
con-vec-tion
con-quer-ed
con-quests
con-science
con-scrat-ed
con-sequen-ce
con-sid-er-ing
con-sist-ed

Ex. 12.

con- pir-a-tor
con- tin'-ued
con- trolled'
con- vened'
cor-o-na-tion
cor-re-spond'-ence
Coun-cil
coun-sel-lor
coun-ties
Cov-e-nant'-ers
cre-ät'-ed
cred'-it-ed

Ex. 13.
crim'in-al
cru-el-ty

Dam'aged
dān'ger-ous
de-bate
De-cem-ber
de-cid-ed
de-ci-sion
de-clared'
de-coy'
de-cree'

Ex. 14.
de-feat-ed
de-fence'
de-fied'
de-file'
de-mand-ed
de-part-ure
de-pōs-ing
de-prived'
de-rision
de-scend-ants
de-cent'
de-scribed'

Ex. 15.
de-sert'ers
de-signed'
de-spair-ing
de-stroyed'
de-struc-tion
de-ter-mined
de-vōt-ed
dif-fi-cul-ties
di-rect-ed
di-rect-ly
dis-ap-peared'
dis-band-ed

Ex. 16.
dis-cov-ered
dis-ease'
dis-grace-ful
dis-guise'
dis-gust-ed
dis-pensed'
dis-tinct-ly
dis-tricts
dis-turbed'
di-vid-ed
di-vi-sion
do-mes-tic

Ex. 17.
do-min'ions
doubt-ful
dow-ry

Ea'ger-ly
ear-nest-ness
ed-u-cat-ed
ed-u-ca-tion-al
ef-fect-ed
e-lect-ing
Em-per-or
Em-pire

Ex. 18.
emp'tied
en-camped'
en-coun-ter
en-cour-aged
en-er-gies
en-forc-ing
en-gage-ment
e-nor-mous
en-raged'
en-ti-tle
en-treat-y
e-rect-ing

Ex. 19.
e-spec'ial-ly
e-stab-lished
e-ter-nal
ev'i-dent-ly
ex-am-ple
ex-ceed-ed
ex-cep-tion
ex-chang-ing
ex-cit-ed
ex-e-cūt-ed
ex-e-cu-tion
ex-er-cis-ing

Ex. 20.
ex-pect-ed
ex-pe-dit-ion
ex-pul-sion
ex-tend-ing

Fac'tions
fail-ure
faith-ful
fa-mil'iar
fa-vour-a-ble
fa-vour-ite
feat-ures

Ex. 21.
Feb'ru-ary
fee-ble
Fen-dal
fierce-ness
flat-ter-er
for-bid-ding
for-eign
for-feit-ed
for-mal-ly
for-ti-fied
for-tress-es
fos-ter-ing

Ex. 22.
foun-da'tion
fright-ened
friv-o-lous-ly
fron-tier
fun-er-al
fu-ri-ous-ly
fur-nish-ings
fur-ni-ture

Gal'lant-ly
gal-loped
gar-ri-son

Ex. 23.
gath-ered
ghast-ly
gov-ern-ment
grad-u-al-ly
griev-ing
guard-ed
guilt-y
gun-pow-der

Hast'-ened
hast'-i-ly
haught-y

Ex. 24.
hav-oc
haz-ard
hedg-ing
his-to-ry
his-tor-ic-al
hoist-ing
hon-est-er
hos-tile
house-hold-ers

Ig'-no-rant
il-le-gal

Ex. 25.
im-me-di-ate-ly
im-peached'
im-port-ance
im-pos-si-ble
in-ci-dent
in-creased'
in-de-pend-ence
in-duced'
in-fe-ri-or
in-flict-ed
in-flu-ence
in-nate'

Ex. 26.
in-no-cent
in-sist-ed
in-stils'
in-ten-tion
in-ter-est
in-tro-duced'
in-vad-ing
in-va-sion
in-volved'
is-sue

Jan'u-ar-y

Ex. 27.
jeal-ous-ly
jour-nals
jus-tice

Ker'-chief
kin-dled
kind-li-ness
kins-men

Law'-yer
lei-sure
lev-y-ing

Ex. 28.
lib'er-ty
lim-it-ed
lin'-ger-ing
liqu-ors
lis-ten-ers
loy-al-ty

Mag'-is-trates
main-tain-ing
maj-es-ty
man-age-ment
mar-riage

Ex. 29.
mar-shal
ma-te-ri-al
meas-ure
mel'low
mem-or-y
mer-ci-less
mes-sen-ger
might-i-est
mil'i-tar-y
min-gled
min-is-ter
mi-nor-i-ty

Ex. 30.
mis'er-a-bly
mis'er-ies
mis-for-tune
mon-op-ol-ies
mo-rass'
mor-tal-ly
moul-der-ing
moun-tain-eers'
mōve-ment
mus-ket-ry
mus-ter-ing

Ex. 31.
Nā'-tion-al
nat'u-ral-ly
neg-es-sary
neph-ew
no-bil-i-ty
No-vem-ber
nu-mer-ous

O-be-di-ence
o-bliged'
ob-tained'
oc-ca-sioned

Ex. 32.
oc-cu-pied
oc-curred'
Oc-to-ber
of-fend-ed
of-fi-cers
op-po-site
op-po-sit-ion
op-pres-sion
or-i-gin
o-ver-bear-ing
o-ver-whelm-ing

Ex. 33.
Par'-lia-ment
pa-tri-ots
pay-ment
per-fect-ly
per-son-al-ly
per-suad-ed
pe-ti-tion
pib-roch
plague
plod-ding
plough-ing
plun-dered

Ex. 34.
poi-soned
pol-i-cy
por-tion
po-si-tion
pos-ses-sion
pos-si-ble
prac-ti-ces
pre-cious
prep-a-ra-tion
pre-vi-ous-ly
pris-on-er
Priv-y

Ex. 35.
prob-a-bly
pro-claimed'
pro-mōt-er
prop-er-ty
proph-et
pro-pōs-al
pros-per-i-ty
pro-tect-or
pro-vid-ed
pro-vi-sions
pru-dent-ly
pūl-pit

Ex. 36.
pun-ish-ment
pur-chase
pur-sued'

Quar'-relled
quar-rel-ling
quest-ion
qui-et-ness

Ram'-bling
rap'id-ly
rav-aged

Ex. 37.
re-bell-ion
reb'el
re-buke'
re-cord-ed
re-cov-ered
re-dressed'
re-duced'
re-duc-ing
re-form-er
ref-u-gee
re-fūs-al
re-gard-ed

Ex. 38.
Re'-gen-cy
reg-u-lar-ly
re-joic-ings
rel-a-tive
re-lease'
rel'ics
relief'
re-lieve'
re-lig-ion
re-main-der
re-mark-a-ble
re-mem-ber

Ex. 39.
re-mit-ted
rem-nant
re-mod-el
re-morse'
re-mōv-al
ren-dered
re-newed'
re-peat-ed
re-port-ed
re-quired'
re-signed'
re-sist-ed

Ex. 40.
re-solved'
re-spect-ed
re-stored'
re-strain-ing
re-venge'
re-volt-ed
re-ward-ed
ri-val
rock-ets
rout-ed
rub-bish
ru-mours

Ex. 41.
Sad'-dened
Sat-ur-day
scaf-fold
scat-tered
scoff-ing
Sec-re-tar-y
se-cure-ly
seiz-ure
se-lect-ed
sep-a-rate
sep-a-rate-ly
Sep-tem-ber

Ex. 42.
se-ri-es
se-ri-ous
ses-sion
set-tle-ment
se-vere'
share-hold-ers
sher-iff
shriek
shriv-en
shud-dered
sig-nal-ly
sil-ent-ly

Ex. 43.
sim'i-lar
skill-ful
skilled
skir-mish
slaugh-ter-ing
slip-per-y
so-ci-e-ty
sov-er-eign
spec'ial-ly
speed-i-ly
spir-it-ed
splen-dour

Ex. 44.
squad-ron
state-man-ship
sta-tioned
stead-i-ly
strength-ened
stub-born-ly
sub-dued'
sub-ject-ed
sub-mis-sion
suc-ceed-ed
suc-cess-ful
sud-den-ly

Ex. 45. suf-fer-er sup-plies sup-port-ed sur-ren-der sur-round-ed sur-viv-or sus-pect sys-tem Tax-a-tion	Ex. 47. tor-tent tor-ture trait-tor trav-el-ling treas-on Treas-u-er tri-umph troub-le-some trust-wor-thy tu-mult	Ex. 49. un-health-y un-ion u-nit-ed un-u-su-al-ly us-urp-er ut-ter-most Val-iant val-our val-u-a-ble	Ex. 51. vi-o-lent-ly vir-tue Wag-gons wan-ton-ly war-rant war-ri-or weap-ons weight-i-ly wel-come
Ex. 46. tem-ple tempt-ed ten-ur-er ter-ri-ble thor-ough threat-ened thriv-ing throng-ing thun-der-er tid-ings	Ex. 48. tur-ret tyr-an-ny ty-rant Un-al-tered un-der-tak-ing un-doubt-ed un-for-tu-nate un-furled un-fur-nished	Ex. 50. va-ri-ous va-ry-ing ven-geance ven-tured vet-er-an vic-tim vic-tor-ies vic-to-ri-ous vict-u-alled vig-or-ous-ly	Ex. 52. whis-pered wid-en-ing with-er-ing wooded wor-ry wrapped wrecked wretch-ed Yield-ed Zig-zag

II.—NEW WORDS.

EXERCISE 1. A-ban-doned ab-di-cat-ed ab-hor-rence Ab-hor-rers a-bol-ish-ed a-bol-ish-ing ab-o-lit-ion ab-so-lute ac-com-plic-es ac-cu-rate-ly ac-cused a-chieved	Ex. 3. ad-di-tion-al ad-hered ad-her-ent ad-journ-ment ad-juncts ad-just-ment ad-min-is-ter ad-min-is-ter-ing ad-min-is-tra-tion ad-mir-als ad-mi-ra-tion ad-vance-ment	Ex. 5. a-mend-ments am-mu-ni-tion am-nes-ty an-ar-chy an-i-mos-i-ty an-mi-hil-at-ed an-mi-ver-sar-y an-nounced an-noy-ance an-noyed an-nu-al-ly an-nu-i-tants	Ex. 7. ar-is-toc-ra-cy ar-is-to-crat-ic ar-rears as-cend-ant as-cend-en-cy a-scribed as-sem-blag-es as-signed As-size as-sumed as-sur-ance as-ton-ish-ed	Ex. 2. a-chieve-ments ac-knowl-edge ac-knowl-edged ac-quaint-ed ac-qui-esce ac-qui-esced ac-quired ac-quir-ing ac-quit-tal ac-quit-ted ad-a-man-tine	Ex. 4. ad-vis-a-ble ag-ile ag-i-tat-ed ag-i-ta-tion a-gue al-leged al-low-ance am-ba-sa-dor am-ber-gris am-bi-tion am-bi-tious	Ex. 6. an-nu-i-ties an-nulled a-non-y-mous an-ti-ci-pate an-ti-ci-pat-ed an-ti-thet-i-cal-ly anx-i-e-ty ap-o-plex-y ap-pall-ing ar-bi-tra-ry ar-gu-ments	Ex. 8. as-tound-ed a-tro-cious at-tach-ment At-tain-der At-tor-ney at-tract-ed aught Au-gust au-thor-iz-ed au-thor-iz-ing a-vail-a-ble	Ex. 9. awk-ward Bal-ance bank-rupt-cies bar-bar-i-ty bar-rack bat-tal-ion bau-ble bay-on-et beard-ed beau-teous be-grimed Ex. 10. bel-lig-er-ents ben-e-fit be-nev-o-lenc-es be-queathed be-queath-ing be-seech-ing biv-onac bla-zon-ry bom-bard-ed bom-bard-ment bor-oughs bor-rowed Ex. 11. braced brav-er-y brib-er-y Bri-gade bruit-ed bud-get bul-warks buoy-ant bur-i-al Cab-in-et cai-tiff Ex. 12. ca-lam-i-ties can-paign can-di-dates can-non-ade ca-pac-i-ty ca-pit-u-lat-ed ca-pit-u-la-tion car-go car-nage car-thurs cel-o-brat-ed cel-o-brates	Ex. 13. cer-e-mon-y cer-e-mon-ie ces-sion Chan-cel-lor char-i-ty cha-teau child-i-sh-ness chim-neys cho-rus chym-ic cir-cuit Ex. 14. cir-cu-la-tion cir-cum-stan-ces clam-bered clam-our clat-ter-ing clem-en-cy clique clown-ish Co-a-lit-ion coin-age co-in-ci-dence co-in-cides	Ex. 17. com-pri-ing con-cealed con-cen-trat-ed con-cil-i-a-tion con-dole Con-fed-er-a-tion Con-fer-ence con-fe-sor con-fi-dence con-fis-cat-ed con-fla-gra-tion con-flict Ex. 18. con-form con-form-i-ty Con-gress con-se-quent-ly con-sid-er-a-ble con-spir-a-cy con-sta-ble Con-sti-tu-tion con-sti-tu-tion-al Con-sul Con-su-late con-sumed Ex. 19. con-tem-po-rar-ies con-temp-tu-ous-ly con-tin-u-ance con-tracts con-tra-dic-to-ry con-trib-ut-ed con-trib-u-tion con-trib-ut-or con-trived Con-ven-ticle Con-ven-tion con-verge	Ex. 21. cres-cent cri-ti-cal crit-i-cal cruis-er cruis-ing cun-ates cus-tom-ary Dead-li-er de-ceased de-ci-sive de-ci-sive-ly Ex. 22. Dec-la-ra-tion de-clined de-fen-sive de-fi-ance de-fray de-fi-fied de-lib-er-a-tions del-i-cate del-uged de-moc-ra-cy de-mol-ish de-nounced Ex. 23. de-nounc-ing De-pend-en-cies de-pend-ent de-plot de-pre-ci-a-tion dep-ri-v-a-tion dep-u-ta-tion de-ri-sive-ly de-rived de-scrip-tion de-jeo-u de-solate Ex. 24. de-spatched des-pa-ately de-spised de-spot-ic des-tined de-tached de-tach-ing de-tach-ment de-throned de-throne-ment de-trac-tion de-vas-tat-ing
--	---	---	--	---	---	---	---	---	--	--	--

Ex. 26. de-vised' de-vis'ing de-vo'tion dif-fur-anc-es dig-ni-fied dig-ni-ty dil-i-gence Di-rec'tors Di-rec'tor-y dis-a-bil'i-ties dis-af-fec-tion dis-ap-point-ed	Ex. 29. dwin'dled Ee-de-si-as'-ti-cal e-clip-se' ef-fec-tu-al-ly e-ject' e-ject-ed e-lec-tions e-lect-ive E-lect-or e-lect-or-ate E-lect-ress	Ex. 33. e-vent-u-al-ly ex-am-i-na-tion ex-am'ined ex-cel-lent ex-cess-es ex-ces-sive Ex-cheq-uer ex-cise' ex-cite-ment ex-claimed' ex-clude' ex-clud-ed	Ex. 37. fi-nance' for-bear-ance for-ci-bly for-est-ers for-mi-da-ble fran-chis-es frat-er-nized fren-zy ful-fil' Gam'bled gam'bling
Ex. 26. dis-as-ter dis-as'trous dis-ci-pline dis-con-tent' dis-cred-it dis-cuss-ed' dis-gorge' dis-heart-ened dis-hon-est dis-mis-sal dis-missed' dis-o-be-di-ence	Ex. 30. el-e-va-tion el-o-quence el-o-quent e-man-ci-pat-ed em-bark-ing em-broiled' e-merge' e-merg-ing em-i-grants em-i-grate em-i-grat-ed em-i-gra-tion	Ex. 34. ex-clu-sion ex-com-mu-ni-ca'-tion ex-e-cu-tion-er ex-haust-ed ex-pan-sion ex-pelled' ex-pens-ive ex-pe-ri-enced ex-pire' ex-plor-ing ex-press-ing ex-pres-sion	Ex. 38. gi-gan'tic glis-ten glo-ri-ous gor-geous gran-deur griev-an-ces guar-an-tee'd guil'to-tined guise Har'bour har-mo-ny
Ex. 27. dis-or-gan-ized dis-perse' dis-persed' dis-pir-it-ed dis-po-si-tion dis-re-gard' dis-so-lute dis-solved' dis-solv-ing dis-taff dis-tend-ed dis-tinc-tions	Ex. 31. e-mo-tion em-ploy-ment en-am-els en-croach-ment en-deared' en-deav-ours en-deav-oured en-mi-ty en-sued' en-su-ing en-tan-gled en-trance	Ex. 35. ex-tin-guished ex-tir-pate ex-tort-ed ex-tort-ing ex-tor-tion ex-traor-di-nar-y ex-trav-a-gance ex-trav-a-gant ex-treme' ex-ul-ta-tion ex-ult-ed	Ex. 39. heir-appar'ent hem-i-spheres hemp-en he-red'i-tar-y he-ro'ic hes-i-tat-ed hoarse-ly hoar-y hol'i-days Hon'-our-a-ble ho-ri-zon hos-pi-tal'i-ty
Ex. 28. dis-tin-guished dis-trib-ute dis-trib-ut-ed dis-tin-ion div-i-dend doc-u-ment do-main' do-na-tions dra-goons' driz-zle drunk-ard du-ra-tion	Ex. 32. en-treat-ing ep-au-let ep'i-lep-sy e-qual-i-ty e-quiv-a-lent es-sen-tial e-stab-lish-ment e-stranged' e-ther e-vac-u-ate e-vac-u-at-ed e-vent-ful	Ex. 36. Fac-to-ries fam-ish-ed fa-nat-ic-al fa-nat-ics fath-om fa'-your-it-ism fer-ment fer-til-i-ty fer-vent fes-tal fes-ti-val fet'id	Ex. 40. hos-til'i-ty hos-til-i-ties house-wif-ery how-it-zers hu-mil-i-a-tion hur-ri-cane Hus-sars' hymns Il-lu-mi-na-tion i-mag-i-na-tion i-mag-in-ed

